

2000年10月

我的



2000年10月

2014年12月

我们的



2014 BOSS 6/8

www.2014boss.com

lang="en">

My Ranch - Chapter 01-54

Table of Contents

1. [Chapter 1: Soul of the Dragon](#)
2. [Chapter 2: Preparing to Leave](#)
3. [Chapter 3: Hell's gate](#)
4. [Chapter 4: Jackpot](#)
5. [Chapter 5: Unimaginable Value](#)
6. [Chapter 6: Sold!](#)
7. [Chapter 7: Finding a new home](#)
8. [Chapter 8: Choices](#)
9. [Chapter 9: This is it](#)
10. [Chapter 10: Priceless](#)
11. [Chapter 11: First Employee](#)
12. [Chapter 12: There is still much to do](#)
13. [Chapter 13: The small things](#)
14. [Chapter 14: Brothers](#)
15. [Chapter 15: Return to Boston](#)
16. [Chapter 16: New home](#)
17. [Chapter 17: Inspection](#)
18. [Chapter 18: Hiring](#)
19. [Chapter 19: Hired](#)
20. [Chapter 20: Taxes](#)
21. [Chapter 21: Forced Approach](#)
22. [Chapter 22: Mr.Anderson](#)
23. [Chapter 23: The First Gathering](#)
24. [Chapter 24: Fishery development strategies](#)
25. [Chapter 25: Bragging rights](#)
26. [Chapter 26: Not ordinary](#)
27. [Chapter 27: A Feast](#)

28. [Chapter 28: Cars](#)
29. [Chapter 29: Animal shelter](#)
30. [Chapter 30: Selected](#)
31. [Chapter 31: Pets](#)
32. [Chapter 32: Bull market](#)
33. [Chapter 33: Buying cows](#)
34. [Chapter 34: Domesticated](#)
35. [Chapter 35: Hellish shed](#)
36. [Chapter 36: Horses](#)
37. [Chapter 37: Bob's Horses](#)
38. [Chapter 38: A pony and a piece](#)
39. [Chapter 39: Gun license](#)
40. [Chapter 40: Dazzled](#)
41. [Chapter 41: Asian supermarket](#)
42. [Chapter 42: Chickens](#)
43. [Chapter 43: River fish](#)
44. [Chapter 44: Threatened](#)
45. [Chapter 45: Ruthless](#)
46. [Chapter 46: Police](#)
47. [Chapter 47: Chaos ensues](#)
48. [Chapter 48: No mercy](#)
49. [Chapter 49: Introduction to italian cuisine](#)
50. [Chapter 50: Boat shopping](#)
51. [Chapter 51: Assembling the boats](#)
52. [Chapter 52: Warship museum](#)
53. [Chapter 53: Dessert shop](#)
54. [Chapter 54: Street food](#)

Chapter 1: Soul of the Dragon

Chapter 1: Soul of the Dragon

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Hey, Jiang you’re back!”

“Did you buy anything good to eat?”

Just after entering the community, a couple of aunties who were sunbathing called out to Jiang Hai who smiled back and lightly nodded.

While showing off today’s catch, Jiang Hai told the aunties that he had gone fishing by the river.

“Jiang ah, did you tell your wife about the stuff I previously told you about? What are her thoughts on them?” One of the aunties carefully called out while slowly walking over.

“Uh, I told her about it, she said she will think it over, but did not give me a clear answer.” Jiang Hai answered reluctantly as a hint of embarrassment flashed over his face.

“Sigh, These rich people are always occupied, but no matter how busy they are, they’re still rich right? Ha ha” The auntie said as she patted Jiang Hai’s arm.

Under the auntie’s laughter, Jiang Hai flashed an awkward smile at the auntie’s laughter and continued home. As he walked through the door, JiangHai dropped his fake smile, sighed and bitterly looked at the lonely eight room house. Smiling rancorously, he carried the bucket and headed to the kitchen. As he passed through the living room, his gaze wandered to the dreary arrangement of three medium sized wedding photos. In them, there are two people, a stylish man and a beautiful woman. Although they are wedding photos, there is no trace of a smile on the woman’s face. Every time Jiang Hai sees the frosty face, a slight headache appears; this is not the type of life he dreamed of.

JiangHai shook his head to clear his thoughts.

“Is there any use to think so much? Once I’ve finally finished everything, I

should quickly find a job so that I can pay back the debt I owe her and get a divorce.” Jiang Hai slowly encouraged himself as he begins to prep the fish in the kitchen.

Jiang Hai, born in 1988, 27 this year, born in China’s northernmost province’s capital city, Harbin.

His life was rather ordinary with a spark of excitement. Before he turned 26, he was a badly spoiled kid in a single child family. His parents were ordinary civil servants, not a large income but enough to get by.

He attended school just like any other normal kid, first elementary school, then middle school and finally high school. Due to his poor grades in high school, he had no choice but to attend a lower ranked university for a degree said to be universal; financial management. During the four years of university, with the exception of first year, he attended about thirty classes in the other three years add all together. Most of his time was wasted reading manga in the dorm or playing games at an internet cafe. He just didn’t have another solution, his university’s internet was just that bad. The only good part about the university was that fact that a payment of 200 yuan ([\\$30 US](#)) per class was enough to pass. Saving him lots of potentially dead brain cells ([1](#)). After graduation when he was 23 years old, he received a job at a local trading company through family connections.

Everyday life was very normal and dull. The year he turned 26, the 3rd year of working for the company, everything changed (then the fire nation attacked!!). First, it was his father’s accidental death, followed by his mother being hospitalized due to not being able to handle the trauma. After his girlfriend found out about this, she decisively broke up with him and ran off with a department manager. And because of this connection, Jiang Hai was relieved of his position of which he spent 3 years of sweat and tears for. In order to treat his mother’s illness, he sold their family home, but still did not have enough money for surgery. At this moment his present “wife” showed up, loaned him 400,000 yuan for his mother’s surgery, but as a return they must get married.

The surgery was a complete success, but his mother did have any thoughts of living left. She died a year after the surgery, which was last month. The death of both parents left Jiang Hai in a very sorrowful state, but life still needs to go on.

In this world, the Earth will continue spin no matter what. This is an irrefutable fact. But if Jiang Hai wants to start all over, then he must think of a way to pay off his “debt first”.

Speaking of his wife, Qi Li, is not an average person. The two can be said be childhood friends. They grow up together, and both sets of parents worked in the same factory. However in '92, his present “father-in-law” started to engage in trade. There were both good and bad times, in 2000, he successfully stabilized and moved the family to Beijing.

Since then, both families pretty much stopped communicating with each other, except for the occasional phone call during holidays and new years. Today, the Qi family company is estimated to be worth several billion yuan. Although it does not all belong to their family, but it is close enough. Furthermore, Qi Li appears to be even more slim and graceful, being comparable to those movie stars and sometimes even surpassing them.

A graduate from a top tier American university, she is an elite of the elite. She only made one major mistake in her life which lead to the marriage between Jiang Hai and her. This piece of information was something Jiang Hai had to inquire others for. Due to his current social standings, Qi Li will never tell him the real truth. This story is pretty much like those prime time wealthy T.v. drama shows.

During the time when Qi Li was still attending school, she found a boyfriend. At the end when she returned back to China, she found out that this boyfriend is from her family's rival company. Although the two of them were madly in love, one day Qi Li accidentally let slip some news about her family's company's investments. Once this news reached her boyfriend's dad, the Qi company easily lost over a billion yuan.

The company's estimated worth immediately halved, and when Qi Li's father received the news, a sudden heart attack took his life. As a result this pair of lovers became bitter enemies over night. Qi Li is determined to take control of her father's company, but the company's board members disagree. In their view, women are just women since her father was angered to death because of her boyfriend, who can guarantee this woman won't run the company into bankruptcy? So as to take over the company and for the company vote, her

mother thought of a brilliant solution. A sham marriage. Which would show, on the surface, that she has cut connections with her boyfriend.

Jiang Hai was chosen to be her partner in this sham marriage. Since the marriage began, Qi Li only spend one night here and slept in separate rooms. The day after, she left the house and lived at the company. After a year of development, she stabilized the company, but Jiang Hai had lost his original feelings for this relationship. Now his only goal is to quickly earn money to repay his debt to her and restart his good old days.

slash. As studies have shown, some tasks cannot be completed halfheartedly. For example, cleaning fish。 Since the catch is from the nearby freshwater river, anyone who has fished there will know that all the fish there are small and wild (2). There are basically two types of fish in the rivers near Harbin. One of them is the carp, and the other type is whiting, which has great flavor, but it is just too small. To eat this type of fish most people just cook them straight up, but Jiang Hai likes to remove the intestines before eating it. Now, while removing the intestines, he accidentally cut himself.

In this fish's belly there is a small white pearl. Not knowing what the pearl is made of, but it is very difficult to handle. A single moment of carelessness caused the pearl to poke a bloody hole on Jiang Hai's hand.

"Fk, rea..." Staring at his bleeding hand, Jiang Hai starts cursing. He picked up the strange pearl in order to figure out what it is, but before he could finish his examination, the pearl vanished. Before Jiang Hai could finish his sentence, he collapsed on the ground and fainted.

The instant he fainted, the original hole on his hand slowly disappeared. A ray of white light started to rise from Jiang Hai's body. If he was awake at this moment, then it would not be hard to see that the white light is coming from the small pearl.

As the pearl rises into the air none stop, a series of ka ka sounds can be heard coming from it. Just like an egg. As the crack sounds begin to soften, a white wormish thing crawled out from the pearl. Without even looking around, it directly entered Jiang Hai's body. As Jiang Hai's body shook, a snake like tattoo starts to form on his body.

At this moment in time, Jiang Hai's consciousness is experiencing a mystical show. It would appear that he become a dragon. A very long, very mystical dragon. This dragon's power can also be said to be awe inspiring to the point where people start shivering at the mention of it. The main thing is that this dragon is the leader of whole dragon tribe. He led them into constant war against legendary enemy tribes of phoenixes and kirins. These wars made the world shake non-stop.

When the three tribes finally exhausted all their tribe's war potential, a group of daoists suddenly appeared. They began to accuse him of all kinds of charges trying to tame him. When he attempted to resist, the leading daoist, who is much stronger, sealed him under a large mountain range. After the passing of eons, he starts to slowly lose his power, and his life. Finally, left with only a sliver of his soul, he fell into the underground water system and left the cavern he was sealed in.

This sliver of soul is nothing but that small pearl of light. It is unknown how long the pearl had drifted for, but today, it was picked up by Jiang Hai. When Jiang Hai had finally woken up, a whole day had already passed, and the fish from yesterday had started to stink. But Jiang Hai spared no thought for the fish as he dazedly stared at his brand new tattoo.

“Was this whole dream real?”

Notes

1. No one likes to write university level final exams, I think everyone who wrote at least one can understand the pain.

2. Chinese attitude: wild > farmed. If its free exploit it, thus no big fish exist in the rivers of China anymore

Exchange rate: 6.66 Yuan = 1 USD

Previous [TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 2: Preparing to Leave

Chapter 2: Preparing to leave

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

As the car slowed to a stop, three people got off. Walking at the front of the group is a woman in a business attire. Although the attire does not have any brand or labels on it, but people who know what to look for can tell right away that the attire is top tier. Beside her are 2 people, a roughly 30 year old foreigner with sunglasses. With trained eyes, she begins to sweep all the pedestrians non-stop. The other one, wearing the same outfit, a pair of glasses and carrying 2 purses walks up quickly.

“What is my schedule for tonight?” The lady at the front asked her assistant.

“Most of the stuff planned today is complete, you have an invitation for dinner from president Liu of SUNRUS, probably to discuss construction plans at West Square. You also have a voice mail message from your mom asking when you going back to mourn your dad.” Answered the assistant as she quickly flipped through her calendar.

“...” When the lady heard the last piece, she slowed down a bit but quickly resumed her pace.

“Tell Liu Zheng Ri I don’t have time for him tonight. I’ll give him 15 minutes to convince me otherwise he can forget about the construction plans. And tell my mom I’ll talk with Jiang Hai about the exact time but it will be sometime during the day after tomorrow.” The lady coldly replied back.

Yup, this lady is none other than Jiang Hai’s legal wife. Qi Li, famous young entrepreneur in China. Young, beautiful, and skilled but without any major coverage. It has already been a year since taking over control of the family company. She used only three months to stabilize the originally wobbling company.

During the remaining 9 months, she recovered a third of her original losses. This made all the board members swallow whatever they were about to

complain about. After all they're all business people, since their old friends daughter can continue to help them earn money then there is no rush to change the company into liquidated assets. Therefore from the looks of things, the company is somewhat peaceful and this should only continue.

"Yes." After hearing Jiang Hai's name from the lady, the assistant had a flash of disdain and hesitation but quickly covered it up as she has no clue how the president and Jiang Hai got together. They're not even on the same level. This is also why she always despises Jiang Hai, and why she didn't tell the president about Jiang Hai's call yesterday.

"President Qi!" The girl at the front desk suddenly called out to the group of three as they entered the building. Qi Li hearing the call couldn't help but to slow down her pace and look at the girl with doubt.

"President Qi, yesterday someone called Jiang Hai called you and even said he is your..." The front desk girl stated with hints of hesitation. Normally stuff like this should be told to the president, but if this is a major matter and was not reported, then it is completely her fault.

"Husband? Right, speak." Qi Li answered without paying any attention.

"En right. He said he has things to talk with you but can't contact you, so he left something at your place. If you have time to go back you can take a look at it." The front desk girl answered in a small voice after a bit of hesitation.

"Oh, got it." Qi Li replied back with raised eyebrows but continued to move forward afterwards.

When the group reached the elevators, Qi Li glanced at her assistant and asked "Jiang Hai called?"

"Yes, he said he's got stuff so he needs to leave for a period of time. No specifics, just hope you can call back when you get the chance," Answered the assistant with a guilty conscience.

"This is the first and only time. As my assistant, you cannot bring your feelings into your work. No matter what, Jiang Hai is still my husband, this is stated by the law and he is not to be despised. Get it?" A frosty reprimand caused the assistant to shrink her neck and can't help but to lower her head.

“Understood.” Hearing the reply, Qi Li stopped thinking further about this matter and left the elevator the moment it reached her destination.

Returning to her office and sipping a cup of office coffee, she pulled out her cell phone and called Jiang Hai. Since getting married, Jiang Hai only called her four times. This makes it the fifth time. She really can’t think of a reason why he is trying to reach her.

“Sorry. The number you have reached is not in service, please check the number and try again.” Unfortunately, the only response from the phone was an automated message.

“This guy, what’s he up to now?” Qi Li muttered to herself.

“Ahchoo! What the heck. How can this overpowered body get sick? What joke is this.” Jiang Hai, who is currently somewhere in Qinghai who had uncontrollably sneezed, unhappily stated.

“It looks like I’m almost there. Hopefully that stupid dragon’s memory is correct.” Jiang Hai muttered as he trekked forward.

This is the 10th day after Jiang Hai butchered that specific fish. Right after butchering that fish, he figured out what that pearl thing was. A dragon ball. No not the ones from Dragon Ball, where you get to make a wish after collecting all seven of them.

This is a piece of a real dragon’s soul. This dragon is not like those field bosses that you find in games and can be soloed. Rather this is of the world boss type, where you’d just get wrecked when you try to solo him. In Chinese mythology there exist three super overpowered races. Phoenix, lord of the sky. Dragons, master of the sea. Finally, kirins who dominate the land. In order to possess more territory and resources, the three races waged constant war.

This was also known as the Era of creations ([1](#)). At that time, the three races were just like modern day super powers, no one wanted a direct confrontation with them. It can also be said that the three races are the masters of the world during that era, and the leader of the entire dragon race is the ancestral dragon. At the end of that period, he was sealed until death under the Kunlun mountain range by the Primeval Lord of Heaven ([2](#)).

After the destruction of the prehistoric era, 99% of the fragments collided together to form the mythical realm of Xuans. The rest of the fragments disappeared into the void. The ancestral dragon's cavern was also included in these fragments. When the fragment containing the cavern fell under the Kunlun mountains, where the dragon ball started to shrink due to lack of celestial energy on earth. Finally when the dragon shrank to the size of a small pearl, it got swept from the cavern, swallowed by a fish and ended up in the hands of Jiang Hai.

The dragon ball which Jiang Hai possesses is that of the ancestral dragon, but it has been weakened countless folds. If this was the celestial realm, then with this dragon ball there exists the possibility of turning into a real dragon, but at the very least have the ability for self protection and then some. Sadly this is earth and the most that can happen is make the human body exceed its limits. At least this is how Jiang Hai sees things.

When he touched this dragon ball, a snake like tattoo automatically appeared on his body. Although there aren't many scales on it yet, according to the information provided by the dragon ball, this is the first stage of a dragon's growth. As long as Jiang Hai absorbs the natural forces (3) from nature, aka find a place with a good environment, then the more energy he absorbs, the more scales are grown on his tattoo and vice versa.

With the growth of the tattoo, additional benefits can be acquired. For example, from the snake tattoo, he can instantly reach the human body's limits and do things such as bench press 220kg, run on a treadmill at a pace of 10km/hr for 3 hours before breaking a sweat, and 8 hours before feeling tired. These type of stats is enough to shock anyone, but this is not all. The most mind blowing benefit, is receiving the power of one of the lords from the prehistoric era. This gave him the ability to breathe underwater, nullify water pressure and freely move around in water as if he was on land.

To be fair, the first two benefits, the boost to his body's physical abilities and the powers of a prehistoric lord are already amazing, but they cannot compare to this final one. Since the whole body of a dragon is precious (4); his sweat, spit, excretions can all be used by organisms for quicker growth and evolution. For example, a drop of his blood can allow a flower seed to become a beautifully grown flower overnight. Unfortunately, since this effect is so overpowered, it

comes with many drawbacks. Everytime he uses a drop of his blood, he loses 3 scales from his tattoo. And to grow a scale, he needs at least 5 days in China.

This was rather disappointing, but since these benefits come from the dragon tattoo (5), if the tattoo evolves further, the benefits would reach unprecedented heights. To Jiang Hai, this is like winning a lottery with no one bugging you for money.

Notes

1. Some time period related to the creation of the universe and stuff as described in the taoist religion

2. Aka op ass taoist monk https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yuanshi_Tianzun

3. 生灵之气 – can someone come up with a better translation for it then natural forces? cuz its pretty much like celestial energy from xuan xia novels

4. MA PRECIOUS!!!!

5. Current stage: snake

[\(Ad support\)TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 3: Hell's gate

Chapter 3: Door to Hell

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

This goldfinger ability ([1](#)) is really easy to use, but there still exists a major problem. The only way to effectively collect scales is by finding a pristine environment with little to no pollution. This is exactly where the problem lies, especially in China. There are many places with pristine environments and some of these places haven't even seen development much less pollution and contamination. But these locations are either in areas that are hard to reach or are too dangerous.

With Jiang Hai's current abilities he: one – doesn't want to become a savage, and two – he doesn't want to get involved in some weird conflict with the locals. So with much thought and advice from outside sources, he felt that it would be a wise decision to buy a piece of land outside of China. Leaving the country is completely fine and all, but where the heck does he get the money from?

Using his dragon's blood to irrigate flowers can be very effective. From his experience, a pot of flower sold to some southerner can easily earn him 300,000 yuan ([2](#)), but that's at the cost of 3 scale pieces. If he wants to immigrate, then he couldn't even think about it without at least several tens of millions of yuan. 100 pots of flowers can roughly be worth 30,000,000 yuan, but that means he needs to wait at least 2 years. Furthermore, how can he level up with these conditions?

He definitely does not have the patience to wait that long. Luckily, in the final fragments of the dragon's memories, he noticed the existence of a treasure vault: the ancestral dragon's cavern. There appears to be lots of shiny jewels hoarded there and from the looks of things; they appear to be extremely valuable.

As such, Jiang Hai, determinedly sold two flower pots for a total of 600,000 yuan. He set aside 400,000 to pay of Qi Li's loan as well as a divorce application. He had called Qi Li, but was rejected by the assistant, so, without further ado,

jumped aboard a plane and headed towards Qinghai.

After arriving at Qinghai, the location of the cavern was not hard to locate given the rough location in his memory. If memory serves, it is one of China's most dangerous places according to legend. The Door to Hell.

The Door to Hell, commonly known as valley of death, is located in the Kunlun mountain range at the Qing – Tibetan border. This area contains perfect conditions for pastures, but it is incomparable with conditions in inner mongolia. To be honest, no one wants to herd their livestock in this area because this place is just too evil.

A long time ago, there used to be many people who entered this valley for one reason or another. But after they enter, they all have the same ending. No one ever came out. Even though the government has conducted research in the area, their result was not too satisfactory as they only came up with three dangers. One, this area contains a huge magnetic field underground making all electronics including compasses useless. Secondly, due to a combination of a strong magnetic field and a lack of tall vegetation, people tend to become lightning rods, effectively making them living lightning magnets.

However, the most frightening is the third reason. This area is covered in hidden rivers and swamps. Once you fall in, no matter who or what you are, you're pretty much guaranteed to die making this area a natural zone of death (3).

If it wasn't for that fact that Jiang Hai can breathe underwater, then he wouldn't even consider coming here. After reaching here, don't mention guides, once people hear he's headed to the Door of Hell, nobody is willing to even rent him a car. Therefore, he can only slowly walk there. Even with a body which has reached human limits, it still took two full days before he reached the stone tablet that marked the bounds of the valley of death.

After hiking another five kilometers in, it is already 5pm. Although right now it is bright with the sun high in the sky, if this was Harbin, then there would be signs of the sun setting. China covers multiple time zones, from GMT +5:30 to GMT +8:30, but the state only recognizes one time setting, Beijing Time, GMT +8. At around this time, anyone who has some knowledge about camping would

know that it is about time to set up camp.

There exists many steps in setting up a textbook campsite: find a dry and flat location, place and secure the tent, and finally light a large enough bonfire to last the whole night. If the location you're at is full of bugs, some bug repellent or incense could also be handy. As for camp food, it mainly consists of dried rations and most asian's favorite food, instant noodles.

Camp security is another serious matter even in the valley of death, especially stuff like warning bells. Even somewhere like the valley of death where it is considered to be a dead place, there still are various creatures that may be dangerous. Places like the valley of death are a scavenger's heaven due to all the electrocuted corpses, so caution is a must. Another point of precaution in the wild is against other humans. Human nature is somewhat better in an urban environment, but out in the woods you never know what they will do. Specifically, no one should be stupid enough to believe everyone you meet is a kind old man.

Thankfully, this night passed without any incident. As soon as the sun rose, everything was packed and ready to go. After 2 full days of hiking, Jiang Hai finally reached his destination in accordance to the dragon's memories. In front of him is a piece of wetland, but it is definitely not as peaceful as it looks and no one knows how deep it goes.

"Ah, Fk it!" After a deep breath and some encouragement, Jiang Hai prepared his special gear and jumped into the wetland. The moment he entered the wetland, his body almost stopped listening to his commands and began to rapidly sink.

Wetlands and water are pretty much the same. Heavy objects that enter will sink, objects with buoyancy can float, and humans can use their hands and feet to swim. The only difference is the existence of soil particles in wetlands which highly restricts movement. With his very expensive breathing apparatus ([4](#)) which can filter out mud, Jiang Hai quickly sank.

Several hours later, Jiang Hai began to feel the mud around himself start to loosen. He knows that this is the start of the underground river system. Sure enough, an hour later, his body suddenly accelerated and sank into a rather still

looking pool of water.

By turning on his waterproof flashlight, he was prepared for a special underwater world with all kinds of marine animals and such. Sadly, what awaited him was a clean and clear river system where you can see straight to the river bed. The river bed was filled with all kinds of bones, some from animals others from humans. Some sort of worm like bug is slithering around, making Jiang Hai feel disgusted, and forcing him to quickly follow the path, provided by the dragon pearl, downstream.

Notes

- [1.](#) This is talking about his cheat blood ability, if anyone is confused
- [2.](#) Okay, we're confused about this as well, the raw says 一盆花, ..., 卖了三十万. There is no way a 'pot' of flowers is worth 300,000 yuan (44,948 USD)... unless he sold drugs? :O
- [3.](#) 生命禁区 – there has got to be a better translation than 'zone of death' that flows with the sentence
- [4.](#) He can only breathe in pure water, so mud doesn't count due to being part water part soil

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 4: Jackpot

Chapter 4: Jackpot

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Uff!” Jiang Hai’s head slowly rose out of the water. Looking around the cavern with the flashlight, Jiang Hai couldn’t stop smiling as he reached his destination.

Crawling up onto the shore, Jiang Hai can’t help but to lie down and let out a long sigh. Looking at his watch, he spent a total of 8 hours swimming to reach here and 4 of those hours was in the underground river. This river was unexpectedly long, the trip going back is definitely going to be much longer. Hopefully the climbing gear can handle the additional weight.

After a short rest, Jiang Hai got up and slowly inspected the cavern. According to the dragon pearl, there are a few breathing holes in the cavern making this place somewhat livable. The pitch black cavern was illuminated as result of shining the flashlight onto numerous reflective surfaces. When his eyes adjusted to the new lighting, he couldn’t be happier.

“Ahahaha, I hit the freaking jackpot!!!!” Jiang Hai laughed crazily while looking at all the gemstones in front of him. The dragon pearl really didn’t lie, hexagonal gemstones of all colours, some purple, some red, some pink, some yellow, and some green were all piled together to form a mountain.

On top of this pile of jewels are a set of bones. If Jiang Hai’s guess is correct, then this must be the ancestral dragon. But after eons of weathering, there is not much left of him. From what is left, it is still possible to spot a pair of dragon horns on top of the head.

“Everyone below saints are just ants. By being an ant, you just gotta accept the fate of an ant. Look at you, fought all your life and died here. Now look at me, I’m just an ant. I accept this fact, but I don’t fight for power or fame and fortune thus I can still walk out of here and live perfectly fine.” Looking at the pile of dragon bones, Jiang Hai self-deprecated. He doesn’t think much about anything, but he doesn’t believe his life is better than the man in the sky ([1](#)).

“Alright that’s enough talk, let us see how much these things are worth.” Shaking his head, Jiang Hai quickly went to examine the pile of treasure. He reached into the pile and randomly moved his arm around as if it was a lucky dip. He grabbed something that shone just like a polished diamond under his light.

“What the, how can a diamond be this ... ka” Jiang Hai exclaimed. If this is really diamond then he really hit the jackpot, but before he could think further, he heard a ‘ka’ sound as he used more power than he should have; the ‘diamond’ shattered into fragments.

“Fk! This was really glass?????” looking at the shattered ‘diamond’, Jiang He is dumbfounded.

Even with bad grades, the fact that diamond is one of the hardest materials in the world is pretty much known to all. If you want to process diamonds then you definitely require machines. When can man crush diamonds? Staring at the shattered ‘diamond’, Jiang He was truly dumbfounded ([2](#)).

Actually, there is no mistake, these things are glass. Glass, during the prehistoric era was very valuable since no one could craft them. Thus most of them back then are naturally formed, resulting in a very low supply and a very high price. But this isn’t the ancient ages anymore.

“How much can this sell for?? G*d Damn it, you’re fking kidding me!” Jiang Hai tosses the glass fragments in hands far away. What joke is this, it was hard enough to just get here as it is, but the only thing here a mountain of glass? Fk this sh*t.

Thinking about it just makes Jiang Hai even more angry. The original plan was sell all the jewels here, buy a piece of property in outside of China, slowly level up and pass a peaceful life. But from the looks of this, everything needs to be delayed. He probably has to go back to plant flowers. The more he thinks about it, the more frustrated he becomes. Without thinking, he raised his foot and madly kicked the ‘mountain of jewels’ in front of him.

A kick later, those glass ‘gemstones’ all shattered into bits and pieces and got kicked far away. Well as facts have proven, sometimes letting out your anger can have many benefits. Just like right now, these glass products have become his stress reliever and this ‘mountain of jewels’ is shrinking at a visible rate. And

what of the dragon's body? Alright, it already got kicked to I don't know where.

Suddenly, his feet slipped after a 'ge' sound. There is something that didn't shatter after being stepped on.

"Ahyo, what is this?" Thankfully Jiang Hai didn't fall off the pile after the slip. Looking at where he last stepped on, there lies a reddish coloured, hexagon shaped stone the size of fist. After examining it and stepping on it, Jiang Hai can confirm, this is definitely not glass.

"Wait, there are real gemstones here?!" Thinking about it, Jiang Hai's eye can't help brightening. If this is the case then this trip might really be worth it. Without thinking further, the stepping experiment continued. Except this time, he is a lot more careful, slowly examining the jewels before stepping on them. If it doesn't break under his feet, then it's probably worth something so it gets packed up.

With this new motivation, 5 days passed surprisingly quick. By the time Jiang Hai left the cavern, he can confirm that 99% of the pile is glass, but within that 1%, there may be gems of significant value. When he climbed out of the wetland, his bags did not shrink but grew. In them was all of this trips rewards.

After cleaning up, Jiang Hai quickly started his 2 day long return trip. In the nearest town, he took a nice long relaxing rest before boarding a plane headed to Beijing. Although he loves his hometown, Harbin, but he knows there is no big auction houses there. Whereas with the this trip's haul, it is much safer to use the auction houses in Beijing.

When arriving in Beijing International airport, Jiang Hai suddenly thought of his wife Qi Li who works here.

"Don't know if she signed it or not." Jiang Hai muttered to himself. They don't even think about you, why would you care now. Anyways hopefully she signed those documents ([3](#)).

"Right, time to move on, me and her are on different roads and our paths are unlikely to cross. No point thinking about these things." Jiang Hai quickly put that beautiful shadow behind him and left the airport. The following few steps were pretty simple: get on the light rails, find a hotel for the next couple days and research all the different auction houses here.

From what he found, there are two types of auction houses. The national ones and the international ones. No one trusts the national auction houses. If the items are only worth a couple of million then it is fine, but as soon as the value goes past tens of millions and beyond, then the items become very dangerous. With his current powers, if the item gets stolen then it is very likely he will either beat the sh*t out of them or even kill them. This will only bring unnecessary troubles, he might not even be able to stay in China anymore.

This is why he can only approach international auction houses. Out of all of the available auction houses, there are three big ones. The biggest of them all: Sotheby's Auction. This auction has somewhat of a subtle relationship with China due to it auctioning some very sensitive cultural relics from the past (4). Thus was easily rejected by Jiang Hai. The second is Christy's Auction, otherwise known as Christie's, which was also rejected for the same reason. Then there is only the final option – Phillips.

Notes

1. 老天 – man in the sky, old man sky, god, jesus, believe what you like but they pretty much mean the same thing.

2. Get swindled son.

3. Divorce papers. The papers which makes you lose half your wealth.

4. During the Qing dynasty, western powers pillaged a lot of cultural relics from China; making this a very sensitive topic which we're not going into.

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 5: Unimaginable Value

Chapter 5: Unimaginable Value

Translated by me, Edited by Kai.

Philips. Established in 1796, it couldn't compare with the well established and well known Sotheby's or Christie's. In the west it can only be considered a second tier auction house. This all changed in '99 when it was bought by Bernard Arnault, the chairman of the French luxury-goods brand Louis Vuitton Moet Hennessey (LVMH), and merged under the same brand name for 70 million Pounds ([1](#)). With the ensuing scandals, Philips was brought to the forefront of the competition where their main focus is on works of contemporary art, design, jewelry, photography and editions. They are also known to sell everything from furniture to art and estates.

This is Jiang Hai's main target. With an appointment booked for tomorrow, he can only wait and hope for good luck tomorrow.

On the following day, in front of Philips office in Beijing, you can see someone carrying a bag with a hopeful look on his face. This person is of course, Jiang Hai.

"Hello. How may I help you?" Asked the receptionist as soon as entered the office.

"Hi, I have book an appointment for today under the name of Jiang." Was the response.

"Oh, Mr. Jiang. Since it's almost 9am, please come with me to our secure meeting room. I'll also give a call to manager Zhang." Hearing Jiang Hai's response, the receptionist brought him to a VIP room, provided refreshments and then left. Not long after, a 40ish year old man wearing a stylish suit entered.

"Mr. Jiang, I am Philips' Auction's Beijing branch manager. Call me Zhang. How may I serve you?" The middle aged man asked after introductions.

"I have some gems that I want appraised." Jiang Hai got straight to the point.

The man is not surprised at all. Anyone who comes here is here for only 2 services. If it isn't appraisal then its for the auction. Even if it's for auction then

they still need the item(s) to be appraised. Therefore Jiang Hai's purpose is very ordinary.

"This is perfectly fine, but we do need to charge an appraisal fee for the items." The manager replied.

"Great, how much is the fee?" Jiang Hai had already researched this fact. Auction house appraisal includes a fee, this fee is the main source of profit for the auction house. As for the auction, then it is just like any luxury brands. They usually don't do business, but when they do, they make tons of profits (2).

"There are two types of appraisal fees. The first type is where we charge you 1% of what the item(s) are worth. It's pretty worth it for antiques worth a few thousand to tens of thousands. The second type is 2000 for an item." Stated the manager matter-of-factly.

"Oh, so it is like this. Then let's go with the flat fees." Although Jiang Hai doesn't know exactly how much all of his gems are worth, but they are definitely worth more than 200,000.

Hearing his decision, the manager invited in two other people. One of them looked like a middle aged professor and the younger one is probably his apprentice. After short introductions, Jiang Hai pulled out all of his rewards from the cavern. There are a total of 213 different pieces of gems which didn't shatter under his very barbaric test. Confirming that he does not have the required fees, they can only check the rocks first then talk about fees later. Jiang Hai really don't want to use his scales to grow flowers. He now only hope there is some gems in the pile that are worth billions.

When the two finished setting up their equipment, Jiang Hai took out some of the gems and waited for their appraisal.

"This is natural crystal, not worth much, roughly 3500." Quickly the gemologist quickly came to a conclusion on the first 'gem'. Jiang Hai can only sigh disappointedly because he knows; ever since mankind figured out how to farm crystals, the price of natural crystals plummeted. If it wasn't for the high purity of this piece, it might not even be worth 3500.

"Looks like I was too optimistic." Jiang Hai muttered to himself as he put away the ones that looked similar. Since they are all crystals then there is no point in

appraising them. On the other side, the appraisal master payed no mind since there is too many types of gems, there is no point to swindle him.

After confirming some tens of pieces to all be crystals, Jiang Hai can only feel helpless. But at the very least, all the crystals are worth more than 2000.

“Eh?” Just as Jiang Hai was about to get used to the outcomes, the appraiser suddenly let out a voice and continued to examine the piece of gem in his hand with greater detail. After ten or so minutes, he stated. “You are lucky, this piece is not natural crystal but a 10 carat natural sapphire. Estimated value at around 1.2 million.”

Jiang Hai was dumbfounded for a second before putting away all those gems that are confirmed to be crystals since he just made back all of the appraisal fees, leaving 132 pieces to be checked. The appraiser can't help but smile since the more work he's got, the more cut of the total fees he gets. Appraising a gem costs 2000, he gets 1500. This is just like Jiang Hai saying “TAKE MY MONEY!”.

Maybe it's because of the sapphire, but the appraiser proceeded with greater attention to details. Sadly, crystals are just crystals. They can't be identified to be gems no matter how hard you look. In pile, there are 121 pieces of natural crystals. Basically, most of the big rocks are crystals and the small one are gems.

After examining 130 pieces, there are only 9 gems.

The most expensive is a piece of 12.37 carat ruby estimated to be at around 2.3 million.

Two other smaller rubies worth a total of 500,000.

Two pieces of 50 carat deep blue sapphires worth 400,000 total.

Finally, three pieces of emeralds estimated at around 1.6 million together.

If the emeralds are sold together then they can fetch another million. The total worth of these gems is estimated to be 7 million yuan ([3](#)).

Although this is far from Jiang Hai's original estimate of between tens of millions to couple hundreds of millions, but 7 million is still not bad.

Of the last two pieces, one of them is a piece of crystal worth a couple thousand. But when the appraiser set his eyes on it, his eyes pretty much went

green. Looking at this rock, he studied for more than half an hour, then told his assistant to get more specific equipment. Very quickly, the assistant came with the equipment required. Another half hour passed before the appraiser just sat there looking at the gem.

“Um, is there a problem?” Seeing the appraiser’s looks, Jiang Hai asked strangely.

“No, no problem, it’s just if there is no accidents then Mr.Jiang, you just hit the jackpot.” Looking at the piece of roughly 4 thumbnails large pink hexagon shaped diamond, the appraiser answers with enthusiasm.

“Jackpot? En, I really did hit a small fortune of 7 million with those gems.” Jiang Hai replied self-deprecatingly without even thinking.

“No, let me rephrase this. All of the your other gems in comparison with this one are all roadside rocks.” Stated the appraiser with absolute certainty. “This gem, I can 99% guarantee is a piece of pink diamond. Excellent gradings on all four Cs. Net weight of 31.6 carat. Do you know the final price of these diamonds? Every carat’s final price is 380,000 USD! (4)”

“380,000 USD, a carat? Then 31.6 is just 12 million USD?” Hearing this, Jiang Hai felt like he get was hit by a hammer and doesn’t know how to think anymore. Sadly the appraiser wasn’t going to let him of this easy.

“No, not even. This is a piece of intact pink diamond. An intact 31.6 carat pink diamond. This price, at the very least needs to be multiplied 20 folds.” (5)

“Siiiiii..... Wait, wait, hold on, let me calm down first...”

Notes

1. Yeah, history. <https://www.phillips.com/about>
2. 三年不开张, 开张吃三年 – no business for 3 years, do business once, earn enough for 3 years ... Ed: I dont always make profits, but when I do, I make a killing :>
3. Gems. Gems are truly, truly, truly outrageous.
4. This price is not guaranteed to be accurate presently.
5. And JACKPOT. xD

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 6: Sold!

Chapter 6: Sold!

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

Diamonds are graded by four Cs. Carat Weight, Clarity, Color, and Cut. Of course, out of the four Cs, only two are important. One the weight. The so called carat is a unit for 200 milligrams, such that five carats is a gram. Then it is clarity, also known as transmittance. The remaining properties: colour refers to reflectiveness of the gem and cut is basically workmanship on the gem. These two are not as important since they can be changed, but the size of gem and it's clarity cannot.

The diamond which Jiang Hai possesses weighs roughly six grams. This gem really is a priceless find. After confirming the legitimacy of the diamond, Jiang Hai had to take almost half an hour before he recovered from the shock. After hearing the diamond's value, manager Zhang rushed over at the first notice. Looking at Jiang Hai's appearance, he hesitated a bit before sitting down, and waking Jiang Hai from his daze.

"*cough*, Mr.Jiang, we have appraised all your items. I'm sorry for being presumptuous, but what do you plan to do with these gems? Are you going to sell them or keep them?" Manager Zhang asked seriously.

"Give me an offer for selling." Hearing the manager's question, Jiang Hai really had thoughts of keeping the diamond. According to the appraiser, it is a 31.6 carat pink diamond, by the ratio of 1 carat to 380,000 USD, it's worth 1.2 million USD. Since this is a one piece, then multiply that by at least 20. That gives 240 million USD. Jiang Hai has never seen this much money nor has he ever thought of it.

240 million USD after conversion is 1 point something billion yuan. Although, compared to his wife, *cough*, ex-wife's net worth of several billion, it is still far fetched. But do not forget his ex's net worth comes from a commerce company, and his net worth is all in the diamond he has in his hands. However he is still clear of why he brought all the gems here; and that is to sell them, not just for

appraisal.

“If you are looking to sell then I can give you two options. One, straight up auction. Your pink diamond, if put up on auction, will at the very least fetch you 240 million with a ceiling of around 4 billion. However this process takes time and effort. There is also the 5% handling fee and the auction tax of the country it was sold to which is around 20%.”

Hearing what the manager had to say, Jiang Hai's first thought was 'this guy is trying to fool me'. Although he had never attended an auction before, he isn't stupid. Specifically, in all those novels ([1](#)), no one takes a cut on the item, not even the auction house. But here, one fifth of the price straight up disappeared. Who's this guy trying to fool?

“cough, you can look up each country's auction tax.” Manager Zhang stated matter-of-factly as he handed over a form after noticing the doubtful looks Jiang Hai is giving him.

Comparing the tax cuts listed online to the ones on the form, Jiang Hai can't help but be tongue tied. The taxes are seriously expensive. Well this can easily be explained. You're selling stuff in other countries, who says they can't tax you? And most importantly, there is also an export fee of 6% at the moment. Seriously, there's taxes everywhere ([2](#)). According to the form, since Jiang Hai is a foreigner, he also has to cough up foreigner's personal income tax, although it is not as heavy as China's but it's still not light. For example, England takes 24%, Australia at 27%, USA at 22%, with the lightest of them all at 18% in Hong Kong.

Of course there are cheaper ones, but they're all third world countries and mainland China. Mainland China's antique tax is 20% of the difference between the auctioned price and the buy in price or its original value, whichever is higher. If it is a family heirloom then its tax cannot exceed 3% of the appraisal price. This is really very little, but here lies the problem.

If an item is worth a couple of thousand or tens of thousands then no one will care too much, but when the item is worth over a few million, who says it yours? You bought ok, where is the receipt? You used credit card? When did you buy it? Who sold it to you? You say it's passed down in the family line, fine, which one of your ancestors? Where on the family tree? Call them, will they answer? Thus

where is the proof that this item is yours?

Therefore this item must have been dug up. As such it belongs to the country (3); and because of this, both Jiang Hai and manager Zhang both avoided the topic of auctioning on the mainland. However, Jiang Hai doesn't want to cough up that quarter of his profits to those countries. Another problem is the time it takes to spread the word about the item. When he finally receives the money, a year and a half could've already passed.

"So what is the second option?" Jiang Hai asked the manager hesitantly.

"The second option is we buy the diamond. Since this diamond is worth at least 240 million, we'll raise the price it by 30% and you don't have to pay any fees. We'll directly transfer the money as well." The manager answered. Unknown to Jiang Hai, this is all just a semantics trap just waiting for him to willingly jump in.

Since this diamond can be auctioned for 400 million, they buy it at 300 million, then sell it privately. Considering the connections an auction house has, this is surprisingly easy. Especially selling to those middle-east royals, they definitely won't mind paying 400 million USD for a diamond to play with, especially one of such a high quality. Just like that the auction house will make a 100 million in profit.

Jiang Hai can also sell it to private collectors, but, he doesn't have the connections. People who can cough up 400 million USD, which is around 2 billion Yuan, can easily buy out 40% of his ex's company. This also needs to be liquid assets. Obviously he isn't on the same tier of society as them. More importantly, after he sells it, it's rather simple for these people to go back on their word and eliminate him with little to no repercussions. Therefore this is a really hard decision to most people, but it's really not that hard in Jiang Hai's mind.

"330 million USD and it's yours." Jiang Hai stated after thinking for a bit. Seriously, don't even say 300 million, even if it was only 240 million he would've still sold it.

Hearing Jiang Hai's response, the manager was somewhat taken aback at how quick he made the decision. After leaving for a couple of minutes to confirm with his superiors, he came back and agreed. The process afterwards was pretty

simple. Unlike a regular market where you say a price, pay up and leave, diamond transactions, especially when it is worth 330 million, have lots of legal documents to sign for both parties.

After signing several documents, the pink diamond is now owned by Philips Auction and Jiang Hai possesses 330 million USD. The next hurdle is how to transfer such a large sum of money. If going by the exchange rate of 6.3418 (4), then 330 million USD is 2,092,794,000 Yuan. If this much money shows up on his account then it would definitely alert the central authorities.

“This sum is kind of big, how about this, I’ll help you get an offshore credit card, then we can transfer the money there.” Said the manager matter-of-factly.

“Offshore credit card?” Jiang Hai asked with a strange look in his eyes.

“Yup, offshore credit card. We have very close connections to most big banks in the west. We keep some of our collection in our own vaults, but the more valuable needs to be stored in bank safety deposit boxes. That is also one of the safest places in the world.” Explained manager Zhang.

Afterwards, the manager starts to explain the different banks to Jiang Hai. There are many banks he can apply for, such as London’s NatWest group, America’s Citibank, America’s VISA, America’s J.P. Morgan and America’s American Express. Out of all of these banks, Jiang Hai has only heard of VISA, but he keeps getting recommendations to use either J.P. Morgan or American Express. (5)

There isn’t much to say about American Express. The world’s biggest travel service, business management, investment banking, and insurance company. They also possess one of the world’s strongest credit cards; the Centurion black. On the other hand, J.P.Morgan is the exclusive bank used by two of America’s biggest financial groups, the Rockefellers and the Morgans. They don’t usually branch out, since there is already enough stuff to do with just the two families alone.

Although Jiang Hai’s understanding of financial groups is rather small, but by being a poor person, he is born to hate financial groups. As such he decided to use American Express, which the manager went to arrange. An hour later, a black titanium alloy card with a roman soldier’s head on it landed in his hands.

(6)

Notes

[1.](#) Ed: This is definitely a credible source... peer-reviewed (reader comments)
LN's or WN's

[2.](#) Hue, tax season, Hue

[3.](#) How to rob people 101: Country vs You, you fked son.

[4.](#) This is exchange rate at the time when the chapter was originally published.
Current exchange rate is 1 USD – 6.6749 Yuan

[5.](#) Ed: What about swiss banks? They're supposed to be waaay better... *cough* as
I've heard other people say >_<

Tl: Swiss bank is usually used to keep the monies off the record

[6.](#) Veni, Vidi, Vici ... though if I was given that much monies, I would Vidi, Vici,
Veni :O

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 7: Finding a new home

Chapter 7: Finding a new home

Translated by me, Edited by Kai.

“Congratulations Mr. Jiang. From now on you are a billionaire, and most likely the youngest in recent years!” The manager stated with envy while Jiang Hai activated his centurion credit card. Since he had helped complete this transaction, he will also receive a commission. But the amount is somewhere around 10 million Yuan. Compared to Jiang Hai’s 330 million USD, there really is a huge difference. There is no way he isn’t jealous. Now the manager wonders if he has got any suitable niece that he can introduce to Jiang Hai ([1](#)).

“Hehe...” Hearing the congratulations, Jiang Hai can only smile awkwardly since he is still in shock.

“The black card offers many different types of services, you can slowly study these at your own time. I’ll quickly go over the main ones with you. You can enter the VIP waiting room at any airport. You can upgrade your room at any hotel that does business with American Express, that’s about 99% of all 5 star hotels in the world. Also, when you are in need of rental cars, you don’t need to book in advance, they are available on call with GPS included. There is no limit on spending and the points you earn can be exchanged with some good stuff. Although these perks seem excellent to me, but they probably aren’t as appealing for you at the moment. Wait until you’ve tried them out and then you’ll see true luxury. One other special service is investment management.” Manager Zhang explained the major uses of the card in Jiang Hai’s hands.

This card offers many different uses. As long as you have this card, you will get treated like an emperor, no matter where you go. The free services are just icing on the cake. Of course, cards like this are separated by ranks. Jiang Hai’s 330 million USD earned him rank 3 services. But these come with high annual fees of 50,000 USD. Well if he spends more than 50 million annually then the fee is waived, but a bottom line exists of having 100 million in the card at all times. Otherwise his service rank will be downgraded, though Jiang Hai doesn’t care

about this right now. To be honest, Jiang Hai has only heard about these services, such as car rental, and charter planes, but has never used them. Thus he can only chuckle at the mention of these.

“Right, since Mr. Jiang has so much money now, are you interested in investing in some modern art?” Seeing Jiang Hai still out of it, the manager starts to advertise. To speak frankly, modern art is simply artworks that have been completed within the last century. Works of Qi Baishi, Chang Caqian, and Xu Beihong can all be considered modern art and their values are also rising rapidly. Their artworks often show up on variety shows and are priced from as low as tens of thousands to as high as tens of millions. Sadly Jiang Hai has no interest in these artworks.

“I have no interest in these things, but I am interested in owning properties. I got nothing to say about the current conditions of land in China right now, but I am interested in fishing grounds and ranches.” Jiang Hai responded after some thinking. Hearing Jiang Hai’s words, Manager Zhang can’t help but be excited.

“Our auction possesses many fishing grounds and ranches, but these ranches and fishing grounds all contain large plots of land. I don’t know how much land Mr. Jiang is looking for?” The manager answered with much enthusiasm.

“Size doesn’t matter and I only have two requirements. One good scenery, and two, no contamination of any sort or any signs of pollution in the area.” Jiang Hai muttered due to the scare caused by the manager’s enthusiasm.

“No contamination or pollution? Well things just got simpler. Excluding some areas in international waters and in third world countries, we have a lot of land in many different countries that suit your requirements. I’ll bring a list for you to look through.” Seeing how enthusiastic the manager is, Jiang Hai can’t really say much but wait for him to bring over the required documents.

In recent years, everyone knows emigrating brings many benefits. Thus the amount of people from China who buy properties in other countries is raising daily. This is directly affected housing prices in those countries. People who emigrate always consider 3 locations first.

One, Oceania. It doesn’t matter if it is Australia or New Zealand. They are all good areas to emigrate to ([2](#)). Great scenery. Low to no pollution. Plenty of

water. Big land mass, low population density. Cheap land with abundant resources. You can buy a ranch here to raise sheep for wool and you don't have to worry about having no market to sell your products since you can just send it to the mainland. If you own a fishing ground then no matter what you farm it's still the same. The high end products can be sold to Europe or America, while the average stuff can be sold in the mainland. There are profits to be made no matter what you do.

These two places are also what manager Zhang first introduced, but the countries in this region in general has one major downside. They are all somewhat anti-Chinese (3). If it's people who can hold in their anger, then it's fine, but for people like Jiang Hai who's got anger management issues, then forget it.

Seeing Jiang Hai losing interest in the Oceania region, the manager can only move onto the next option, Canada. As for EU, it's great for talented people. High living standards, but expensive commodities. It is fine if you only live in urban areas, but Europe is just too cramped. People like Jiang Hai who want to own ranches and/or fishing grounds need to go countries with a greater landmass.

If you're not planning to emigrate to any Oceanic countries, than Canada is the next best choice. It has all the pluses of countries in the Oceanic region with the benefit of being next door neighbors with US. Here, the Philips auction house has many holdings, such as islands, fertile lands, expansive grasslands, fishing grounds, mountain regions and so on. They have it all. But for the same reasons as above, these regions are also anti-Chinese (4).

Seeing Jiang Hai reject both Oceania and Canada, manager Zhang is now somewhat in a bad mood.

"Since you rejected Canada, then there is only the United States of America. what do you think?" The manager asked after some thinking.

For being the world's strongest country, of course Jiang Hai knows alot about it. Bullying other countries constantly (5), honestly Jiang Hai also wants to reject this country since it's also anti-Chinese, but before he could speak, the manager cut in. "Mr. Jiang, I can understand. Your alone in a foreign land, there will

always be people with prejudice against you. Since you want to buy ranches and fishing grounds, then there is only that many countries who can support it.”

“Don’t even think about the land here in China, they are never yours. IF you go to Russia, you don’t have people to hire. Europe is too crowded, the amount of land you’re looking to buy can be greater than some countries. So no this also isn’t possible. Then there are only countries in South America, Middle East and Africa left. But do you even have the balls (6) to go there? Thus you can only own land in these three areas. You reject Australia and Canada, I can understand since there just aren’t many people to populate these countries. 7.692 million square kilometers housing only 24 million people in Australia. Canada has a landmass of almost 10 million square kilometers but with a population count of only 35.16 million. These areas are very prone for accidents to occur since it’s just too easy to loathe a nationality or a single person. This is fine, but America is completely different. A country with 300 million people, who also places significant importance on ethnicities. Although some states have different laws to deal with different kinds of people such as Texas, but there are many other states who welcome and protect Chinese emigrants.” Seeing the manager ranting for so long, Jiang Hai can’t help but accept the stated facts.

Indeed, there are haters (7) everywhere. Who says I have to live with them? Seeing Jiang Hai’s attitude loosen, the manager quickly began to introduce the holdings Philips has in America.

There are six areas in USA which are suited for Chinese emigrants. First California, but two problems exist. One is high levels of desertification and two a piece of land here costs too much. Second would be Washington state. Third is Oregon. Not far from the ranching state of Montana, but transportation there is just terrible. Though at the very least Oregon has Portland. Fourth on the list is New York State. You can’t buy land here since there aren’t any available. But you can buy it in the neighbouring state, New Jersey, with somewhat fair prices. Recommendation number five would be Florida, but it’s kind of a mess there. Lastly there is Massachusetts. Boston (8).

Notes

- [1.](#) Arranged marriage spotted!!! CRASH IT AT WILL!!!
- [2.](#) Kai: Come join me in Australia ^.^

[3.](#) Canada does not support racism, We welcome you with open arms

On a side note, Trump definitely support racism. SO VOTE DRUMPF!

Kai: Based on GDW (Taiwan) and other chinese novels (haven't researched it myself at all), I guess the Asian countries are a bit *anti-chinese* but Australia is not -.- (we're pro-multicultural)

[4.](#) Kai: Hasn't given a single reason anywhere...

[5.](#) Kai: Lies, they come bringing freedom >.<

[6.](#) heh, balls. xD

[7.](#) haters gonna hate, what can you do ☐

[8.](#) hue, 1 word, nuff said.

Kai: As a side note, I don't understand why the author doesn't just go, 'Jiang Hai moved to US' instead of making all the other countries seem so bad.

TI: what can we do haters gonna hate

Kai: Side note 2, he should go to portland, be friends with wesen and the friendly neighbourhood Grimm, definitely make a lot of monies at the spice shop

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 8: Choices

Chapter 8: Choices

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

woooooo

screeeeech

The huge wheels of the plane touched down on the runway with a rumbling sound. Being jolted out of his sleep, Jiang Hai looked around with half-lidded eyes and noticed the scene outside his window. When he saw the beautifully radiant, clear skies outside, the moodiness caused by his abrupt awakening quickly disappeared, changing into a bright, hopeful outlook.

“Hey, Jiang, time to get off.” Just as Jiang Hai was stretching his cramped and stiff body, a slightly high-pitched and filled with fake enthusiasm voice reached his ears. Hearing this voice, Jiang Hai can’t help but wince.

“I know, I know. What’s the rush anyway? The plane hasn’t even stopped yet, how are you going to get off? Jump?” Jiang Hai snapped.

“Hahaha, Jiang, you’ve definitely got a sense of humor.” Hearing Jiang Hai’s reply, the person paid it no mind and quickly brushed it off.

When the plane came to a stop, the boarding platform was connected and the two exited the aircraft. Due to the privileges from Jiang Hai’s credit card, they swiftly cleared security and left the airport. Outside the airport, a car was ready and waiting for them. Seeing Jiang Hai and his shadow, the waiting driver opened the door ([1](#)) and the two immediately took their seats.

“Jiang, let’s go to the hotel first for some R&R before heading over to see that plot of land. The land isn’t too far from the airport, it’s just an hour’s drive from the city.” The person beside Jiang Hai babbled on.

“Don’t try to fool me, you think I don’t know where we are? Where we want to go is in the opposite direction of the city. We are currently at General Edward Lawrence Logan International Airport, south of Boston. We want to go to Winthrop which is on the north side!” Jiang Hai displayed a map of Boston on his

phone and stated, in a grumpy mood.

“Oh, who knew my boss is this smart. Not only is he young and has lots of money, but he can also comprehend maps. I am ashamed” The person continued, paying no mind to Jiang Hai’s mood.

“If you don’t shut it, your very intelligent boss will have to find someone else as his guide.” Muttered Jiang Hai while giving him an irritated look. Hearing this, the other person quickly closed his yapping mouth.

“Go to Winthrop.” Jiang Hai instructed the driver, then went back to sleep. Thinking back, it had almost been a month since he had received the money.

Since he had confirmed his choice to emigrate to America, everything else was pretty straightforward. Phillips can really be worthy of the title, the third biggest auction house in the world. While others may require over a month to complete the process of receiving a passport and visa, but it took Phillips only 10 days before it fell in Jiang Hai’s lap. Afterwards, Jiang Hai boarded a plane and headed to his first stop; California.

The annoying chatterbox with him, is called Will Anthony. He is a black dude and is one of Phillips’s American based employees. Since he is the only one who can speak Mandarin fluently, he was specially selected to act as a guide and translator for Jiang Hai in America.

The city of Los Angeles, and other major cities, such as San Francisco, in California are all popular places for Chinese emigrants. As such, there is a low occurrence of racial discrimination acts. Other places which also aren’t racially discriminatory include San Diego, Irvine and so on. In short, California is very Chinese friendly, but it was quickly rejected by Jiang Hai due to three reasons. One, the land here is too expensive. Two, there are hardly any fresh water sources. And three, most of the Chinese here are from the south, unlike him, who is from the north.

Thus they went on their sightseeing trip around the country ([2](#)). Their second stop, Orlando. This is not a big city, but it makes it’s name as a vacation stop. Sadly this place is too close to south America, as such, just as Jiang Hai had finished examining all the holdings here, he witnessed a shooting and so it was immediately rejected.

Next, heading north, they stopped in Seattle, Washington. Jiang Hai immediately fell in love with the place here. Tones of freshwater, plenty of sea water resources, next to the Pacific ocean. Lots of green forests, good air quality and with a great temperature range this area really moved Jiang Hai. However, it dropped down on his consideration list since it has a major downside, the earthquakes here are just too frequent.

Soon afterwards, they visited the rose city of Oregon: Portland. Surrounded by a sea of grass, this place is great for ranch farms. The people here are also friendly and welcoming, thus making it another possibility. Sadly, there isn't an ocean nearby.

Finally they decided to check out New York and Boston before coming to a decision. Truth to be told, even the most optimistic person will not even try finding any good places in New York. Not even Jiang Hai. Though it is another matter altogether for Boston. Most people will know the city through its universities. It has the world's top law school, Harvard. Top tier research university MIT (Massachusetts Institute of Technology). Top tier musical arts institute, Berklee College. There is also Ivy member Tufts University and Boston college.

This is a city brimming with universities. Not only that, this city also has an amazing amount of history, including having the world's first street lights and the world's first telephone line. China's enthusiasm for basketball was born here, but this is also where basketball started.

They observed all of Boston's education institutions as they passed through the area; Jiang Hai thought that they are all tidy and clean, but the whole city felt somewhat cramped. This is due to being one of America's first cities. They were built to be like so. At the very least, Jiang Hai doesn't have to be a part of the cramped quarters, since the plot of land he is interested in is on the outskirts.

Boston is a coastal city. It's just like other major Californian cities as well as Seattle, but it is not situated in an earthquake prone zone. There is the risk of the occasional blizzard and hurricane, but this is very much like the weather in Harbin, so it's not of great concern to Jiang Hai. After he compared it with California or Seattle, there are no earthquakes in Boston, land is cheaper and it also has got massive fields of grassland. Compared to Oregon, Boston is closer to

the sea. And don't even mention Florida or New York since Jiang Hai had never even thought of settling there.

The roads in America are not like the ones in China, and are incredibly spacious and domineering, as if splitting the land into two. As soon as you leave the city, you arrive at the well maintained highways. This is rather unlike the road conditions in China, where the first thing you do with any car is raise its base to avoid being grinded down (3). Therefore, it didn't take long before they reached their destination.

"Look Jiang, that is our objective, Green Forest Estate." Will pointed to scenery outside. When Jiang Hai's looked outside the window, he couldn't help but widen his eyes. He suddenly had a feeling; 'This is it'.

The plot of land in front of him is called the Green Forest Estate. This is what you call picturesque. Endless seas of grass waving with the wind, A large forest in the distance providing both scenery and windbreak. A perfect spot to lose oneself, pondering the mysteries of the universe. Past the forest is sea, its waves rumbling and crashing as they batter the golden beach, which is holding the sea at bay. Beside the beach is a cluster of manors and a plantation of small gnarled grapevines growing nearby. This estate has it all. Ranch, fishing ground and winery all combined in one. What else can you ask for?

Seeing the breathtaking scenery, Jiang Hai is really satisfied. Since this estate has stopped its operations for some time, there are basically no animals. But Jiang Hai's decision seems to have already been made. After a couple of minutes, the car reached the entrance to the ranch. A middle aged man was waiting for them. He seemed worried, but still came to welcome the guests with smiles.

Notes

1. to shafron?
2. PAID VACATION!! YEAH!!! – Will
3. Rip car, but hey fast and furious

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 9: This is it

Chapter 9: This is it

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Distinguished guests, welcome. I am called Robins Garcia, the temporary caretaker here.” Seeing Jiang Hai and Will get out of the car, the middle aged man came forward with a somewhat forced smile.

“Hi, I’m Jiang Hai, you can just call me Jiang.” With just a shake of hands, you can tell difference between amateurs and professionals ([1](#)).

“Hello Mr. Jiang. I know why you’re here, follow me please.” Knowing Jiang Hai is chinese, Robins spoke slowly, clearly enunciating each word. Although Jiang Hai didn’t have many opportunities to learn english, it’s still passable.

Since he was going to come to America, during the period when he was waiting for his visa documents, he started to relearn english. Who knows if it’s because of the tattoo, but he became smarter than he was before. Half a month of cramming, plus listening and participating in conversations after coming to America, he is now able to comprehend most of what is being said to him. Of course, Jiang Hai would never admit that Will had helped in any way whatsoever. This is also why Will only helps out with the more difficult words, changing them into simpler English, rather than Mandarin.

“Alright.” Answered Jiang Hai. After which both Jiang Hai and Will followed Robins into the estate.

The unit used to measure plots of land in Europe, America, Canada and Australia is acres ([2](#)). Thus all land is priced around acres. Different areas have different prices. Places like Texas or Montana, have very cheap land prices. An acre costs around a thousand to two thousand USD. If it’s New Mexico then an acre cost less than a grand USD. Sometimes, it’s even possible to purchase land there for around 550 USD an acre. Don’t even think about these prices on the east coast. You’d be lucky to get an acre for ten thousand.

According to the research done by Jiang Hai, an acre in Winthrop cost roughly

12,700 USD. At this price, you can get more than 6 acres of land in Montana. According to the estate data, the total land is 11,200 acres. Of those 11,200 acres, 9,200 acres is taken up by the ranch, plus a 1000 acres of forests (3). The trees here are all at least a decade old. Of course, if Jiang Hai wanted them gone, it can be done. But when he suffers losses due to blizzards or hurricanes he can't go crying to the insurance companies. They won't compensate you if you have removed or not created natural (trees) or man-made (walls), barriers of protection. The last 1000 acres is for the winery. Three types of grapes are planted here, but no one is taking care of them at the moment.

Just the land value alone is 142.24 million. The original owner of this place is the general director of Lehman Brothers Holdings Inc. At the peak of its time the company was worth 691 billion USD, but sadly when the mortgage bubble burst in 2008, the company filed for bankruptcy. In order to recover, this major shareholder can only liquidate his assets which included this estate. At that time, he sold this piece of property to Philips for 150 million, but now they're selling it to Jiang Hai for 280 million. The amount of scamming these people do is definitely next level (4). Of course, Jiang Hai doesn't know.

He only knows that this estate has 11,200 acres of land with 720 square kilometers of maritime space. The estate boundaries is defined by his ranch. By following the ranch's coastal line, it encompasses a total of 4.2km. But this is very little when compared to the estate's holding in the sea. On paper the estate has an effective range of 170 kilometers, that's roughly 92 nautical miles. If going by a boat with a top cruising speed of 30 knots, then from coast to edge would take 3 hours, a round trip around the whole perimeter would take roughly the whole day. This much land can all belong to Jiang Hai with just a nod of his head.

"The land here is really, really great. I don't know the particular result of farming grains here, but farming vegetables and ranching all have great yields. There is also the gulf here with abundant freshwater resources at the nearby Lake Lewis. There are also a lot of underground water sources, so there are no worries about any water shortages. The previous owner set up four springs to provide enough water for irrigation and everyday usage." Robins explained as they prepared to enter the estate with the already prepared ATVs.

Generally, these vehicles are not allowed on the road, but it is one of the best

modes of transportation in a ranch. Jiang Hai has a driver's licence, but never had the chance to drive. This is also his first time driving this type of vehicle, but at least there is Robins providing support (5). Along the way, Robins kept on explaining the current situation with the estate.

“Other ranches face a very troublesome problem of herding the animals every season. This is to leave the grass seeds untouched when all the grass in an area has been eliminated for the future, but we don't have this problem here. We can raise at most 20,000 heads of cows here at one time, but the upkeep of this is too high, thus 5000 heads is perfectly fine, and allows them to wander. Fodder here is definitely not a problem, and this includes winter feeds.” Seeing Jiang Hai's peaking interests in this area, Robins continued his explanation. From the looks of things, he is very knowledgeable in this field. Especially about the grassland here.

“Before 2008, the net profit from the beef raised here reached 11 million USD annually. This is also under the condition of not reaching max number of cows, if it is maxed then the net profit would at the very least be 3 times as much. The winery over there won a couple of international awards, thus selling a bottle for a couple dozen USD is perfectly fine. The 1000 acres can produce a minimum of several hundred thousand bottles annually. Subtracting labour costs and raw materials, it can bring in at least 5 million in profits.” The group quickly passed the grassland and entered the winery. There is currently nothing on these matured grape racks.

Past the winery is the forest. In China, timber is sold in terms of cubic meters, but in America, there are specific regions of lumbering. The forest here is protected; no one will buy timber from here, thus there was not much to introduce.

“The fishery is the biggest profit maker here. Before 2008, there used to be a 100 tonnage fishing trawler here. I don't know the specifics, but I heard this place makes at least 20 million USD per annum. Due to the lack of activities in recent of years, the stocks have probably already recovered.” Past the forest, is the beach. As soon as they took a rest here, they felt the comforting sea breeze and heard Robins continuing his explanation.

“Sir, I know I'm not the first one to say this, but this is definitely a great place

to settle. Great grassland, high levels of stocks in the fishing grounds, and only an hour's drive away from Boston. New York's Long Island is right across the sea. Roughly 3 hour drive to reach the Big Apple. No pollution of any kind, with a high air quality index score year round. I believe here is much better than in Montana since the cow feces smell sweet (6)." Seeing how Jiang Hai is pretty satisfied with the property, but still hasn't said the final word, Will can't really do much. Even Robins became anxious as he said this.

Looking at the grand ocean in front of him, Jiang Hai is very satisfied, but this price is kind of a big deal. He only has 332 million, the other 2 million coming from the rest of the gems and crystals. If he really did buy this then that's 280 million gone with only 50 million left in his bank. This level of spending really makes him anxious. Therefore he is still wondering if it is worth it (7) to pay this gigantic bill.

"Ummm..." While Jiang Hai is still feeling this 280 million price tag is too much, he felt a burning sensation in his chest. This feeling, Jiang Hai has already gotten used to. Taking a look at his checkbook, Jiang Hai nodded.

"This place, I want it."

Notes

1. GTFO NOOBS!! OMG STOP FEEDING, WHY IS IT SO HARD TO GAIN ELO!!
2. Chinese people like to use mu to measure plots of land. 1 acre = 6 mu
Kai: In Australia we use hectares ^.^ (acre = imperial, hectare = metric units)
3. TL: Original text 一亩英亩; I don't understand what a mu of acres is so ima take an educated guess and say the author probably wanted to say 1000 here.
4. What does the scanner say about their scamming level? IT'S OVER 9000!!!!
5. FIRST TIMER INCOMING!! HIDE YO WIFE, HIDE YO KIDS!!!
Kai: inb4 Will pulls out an action cam and catches Jiang Hai stacking it
6. Raw: 牛屎的味道, 这里的却是甜的, WTF?!?! O.o I'm done here, peace
Kai: Maybe he means, the environment is so good, the cow's feces don't smell as bad as feces from a cow in a polluted environment
7. WURF!! It's so wurf. if u get want i mean
Kai: Perhaps he haggles in the next chapter, no way would you accept the price straight away

Chapter 10: Priceless

Chapter 10: Priceless

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Never thought it would happen this quickly.” Looking at the changes to his tattoo, Jiang Hai can’t help but mutter quietly.

This was the reason for the burning sensation on his chest at noon.

These last couple of days, he often feels this sensation. Whenever a scale grows, his chest will feel as if it’s burning. If he used his blood then he’ll feel a fluctuation of his heartbeat. These sensations are rather uncomfortable, but he has become used to them. What he hadn’t expected, is the time in between the growth of each scale.

In China, it takes about 5 days for a single scale if he stayed in Harbin or 8 days if he is in Beijing. The time period shortened when he reached America. 3 days for California, 2 days in both Washington state and Oregon. He clearly remembers, when they left Portland, the scale only grew $\frac{2}{3}$. Even if the environment in Boston is exceptional, then it would come out tonight at the earliest, tomorrow morning at the latest. Yet he’s only been here for a couple of hours and that $\frac{1}{3}$ finished growing. This reason in particular was what helped him make his final decision in buying this place.

The basis of all his income comes from his body. It doesn’t matter where it likes, as long as it likes a place, Jiang Hai will buy it. See Jiang Hai finally saying yes, both Will and Robins let out a sigh of relief. Afterwards, they headed back to the residential area to sort out the details.

For an area this big, which includes a ranch, a fishery and a winery, to return to normal operation, there needs to be at least ten plus people working. Residence for the workers is also a must. The previous owner wasn’t short on money, so all workers received their own 2 floor house with an attic. Each house has 4 bedrooms, a big living room, basement, bathroom, kitchen and so on all included. There is a total of 15 of these houses available. From the looks of things, there use to be 15 employees, 15 families to be exact ([1](#)).

The house for the owner is huge to the degree of being seriously scary. It took up roughly half an acre, roughly 2000 square meters. As you enter the ground floor, you see an expansive living room. Although it is currently empty, it's not hard to see the time put into the intricate design of the structure. The connected dining room takes up 200 square meters, heading left is a 50 square meter guest washroom. Beside the washroom is the 100 square meter kitchen. Since there is currently nothing here, then there is no worry of have not having enough space for future appliances. Beside the kitchen is a big bathroom. The whole bathroom including the room for the big tub uses 300 square meters. Across the hall is the entrance to the giant garage.

On the right wing, there includes a laundry room, a cold room for fruits and vegetables; the meats are also stored separately in the cold room. At the end of the hall is a bunch of rooms. According to Robins, these rooms are for the butlers and maids. Hearing this, Jiang Hai can't help but let out a wry chuckle.

Since when did servants ever get their own private rooms? These rooms also include air conditioning, heating, separate bathroom and washroom. Seeing the running cables on the ground, computers and televisions are probably included. A bedroom plus a guest room adds up to around 60 square meters each. And this is just for the servants! Back in China, the house he grew up in is only 40 square meters. See the difference?

Although, when compared to the rooms upstairs, these rooms can only be said to be said to be used by the servants. Even without anything in them, the rooms upstairs can be compared to hotel suits. In total there are 12 rooms on the second floor. Excluding a private den, a fitness room, a gaming room and a room for TV plus movies, the rest are all bedrooms. A master bedroom plus 7 guest rooms. These guest rooms each include a 50 square meter living room, a big bathroom, and sleeping quarters which has it's own washroom. In addition, each of rooms comes with a small kitchen and balcony facing the beach. In total each of these rooms uses 150ish square meters ([2](#)), are you try to bury people with money alone? At least, all of these belonged to Jiang Hai now.

Finally the master bedroom, due to all the previous surprises, Jiang Hai is somewhat prepared. First is the walk in closet. It's freaking 30 square meters! The bathroom is also huge. In it is a pool big enough to fit at least 4 people.

Seriously who was the previous owner taking bathes with 24/7? There is also a private library, a kitchen, 2 guest rooms; one open, one private. 2 small bedrooms each a dozen or so square meters, and the 80ish square meters master bedroom. The bed here is freaking 4 meters by 6 meters, don't know if the bed is really for sleeping or for 'other' purposes (3).

Jiang Hai is pretty satisfied at what he paid for after the tour of the whole estate. When he told Will he wants this place, he didn't even try to haggle the price tag of 280 million, but paid everything upfront. Without even returning to Boston, he bought some daily necessities and moved in. He clearly didn't forget why he wasted 280 million USD. It is mainly for this snake on his chest. If this place can't speed up his leveling process then he's really going to regret signing that document tomorrow.

"8 hours for a piece of scale, this is simply amazing. 3 pieces a day, I need a total of 1080 pieces and I've got 137 so far. At this pace, I can rank up within a year!" Jiang Hai thought as he stared at the tattoo on his 'beautiful' muscles.

Knock, Knock, Knock

While Jiang Hai was still examining his 'handsome' self, a series of knocking sounds disturbed the peaceful silence.

"Who is it?" Jiang Hai called out after being scared out of his day dreams.

"It's me." From outside the doors came Robins' voice.

"Oh, sec." Quickly dressing up, Jiang Hai opened the door and asked. "It's already late, what's up?"

"It's like this, Mr.Jiang. I, I want to invite you to dinner. I know you chinese people have a habit of settling problems at the dinner table, so I went and picked up some seafood and beef while you were shopping. So please come try my cooking."

"Oh? Sure!" Northerners are usually easy going people, as long as personal safety is covered, naturally they won't be modest when invited.

After packing up some things, Jiang Hai followed Robins to his residence. The place he lives in is one of the 15 'worker homes'. It also the only residence with someone living in it. It lacks decorations, but considering how barren the whole

estate is, they paid it no mind.

Within Robins' house is a dining room filled with several dishes. A pan of roasted beef, a plate with some kind of golden-brown fish, and 2 big bowl of salads. One veg, one fruit. Accompanying all of this is a basket of dinner rolls (4).

If it's those traditional rich people were here, the they would immediately lose their appetite, but to Jiang Hai this is what you call dinner. People from Harbin all like to simply drink and eat a lot, unlike the southerners with their nitpicking eating methods. Seeing all these tasty delicacies in front of him, Jiang Hai almost lost some self control. After some courtesies, both people sat down and dug in. The first thing Jiang Hai did after sitting down is picking up a piece of roasted beef. As soon as the beef entered his mouth, he was left speechless with its savoriness.

Notes

- [1.](#) Rich bastards. Give us some money!
- [2.](#) Omg, I know you're clearly rich, so can i get a small loan of a million dollars?
- [3.](#) You guys know what it means. Just imagine
- [4.](#) Tl: I'm hungry now -.-

Kai: nomnomnom, none for you

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 11: First Employee

Chapter 11: First Employee

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

The meat has a unique tightness and odour only found in beef, making it taste just right. The meat itself is especially tender and succulent, and when you bite into it, it melts in your mouth. With the extra kick from cayenne pepper, Jiang Hai excitedly wolfed down a piece and reached out for more.

A half-inch piece of roast beef, was demolished in around two to three bites. Table manners like this would definitely breach upper echelon etiquette, and result in snide comments. However, it made Robins very happy that Jiang was enjoying his cooking. To be completely honest, Robins' cooking skills can only said to be average and nothing special.

The beef this time had lost much of its taste and elasticity due to being slightly overcooked. Chinese people tend to like their meat well done, not like the westerners with their medium rare. Thus adding on some very primitive seasoning ([1](#)), it can only be said to be very average. At least the meat prices in America is almost dirt cheap compared to the expensive vegetables.

Since Jiang Hai is coming to America to invest in ranches and such, he had of course done some basic research into these areas. The beef in America is graded on both it's age and it's marbling ([2](#)). There are 8 different marbling grades: prime, choice, select, standard, commercial, utility, cutter and canner. The age of the cow when it was slaughtered is also graded from A to E. Where A grade beef is between 9 and 30 months old. B grade ranges from 30 to 42 months, C grade ranges from 42 to 72 months, D grade ranges from 72 to 96 months, While E grade is from 96 months and onward. Pretty much all the meat sold in supermarkets in the USA are all A grade.

No one is willing to keep their cattle past 30 months since they lose too much profits this way. The only possible reason of why they would keep their cows is if the beef prices are substantially lower this year. But ever since America started to export to countries such as China, Korea, and Japan in Asia, people rarely keep

their beef, the most they do is only cap the prices.

The beef that Jiang Hai is currently eating is of the standard grade. Prime and choice cuts never show up in supermarkets since they have their own specialized stores or it's provided to high-end restaurants. The best grade beef available in supermarkets is the select cuts, but it is also the most expensive. A pound of select grade beef costs around 50 USD, but standard, commercial and utility cuts are much cheaper.

Standard cuts cost around \$8 a pound, \$5 for commercial and only \$3 for utility cuts. Cutter and canned cuts can't be sold straight away; they need to be processed first. Cutter cuts generally tend to be processed into ground meats, costing around \$1 for a kilo ([3](#)). Canned grade cuts are used to make canned beef. Except being specially used in military, no ordinary citizen will eat them. They are only used as special pet food. When on sale, these cans cost around 30 to 50 cents, otherwise it usually costs a buck or two for a kilogram of canned beef ([4](#)).

Beef in America is seriously cheap. The standard cut that Jiang Hai is currently consuming is much tastier than the ones in China. This is not him idolizing foreign things, but it's mainly because of the quality of meat of the cows when slaughtered. The cows in China only have an average of 50% saleable meat while the ones here average around 80%. This 30% gap is seriously big.

This kind of meat in China is generally reserved for the steakhouses, while the ones available in markets tend to only be commercial grade. The tough cuts, like the chuck and the brisket, tend to only be of utility grade. Although Boston has a high cost of living, but the cost of utility grade beef when converted to Yuan is not even 20 Yuan for a catty, but in China it costs more than 40 Yuan ([5](#)). The \$40-50 standard cuts when sold in steakhouses in China would cost at least 200 to 300 Yuan. This is the difference, as long as you cook the meat thoroughly and remove any odours it might have, then of course it will taste delicious.

Now onto that piece of fish. From the first taste, Jiang Hai can only be surprised at how delicious it is. It even has a subtle sweet taste to it.

"This is atlantic cod, one of the most sought after fish in the Atlantic. There used to be some here, but if we're going to have to farm fish, then this species is a

must have.” Seeing Jiang Hai’s satisfaction, Robins explained.

“En, If this was sold in China then it would probably be very welcoming.” Jiang Hai agreed.

This type of fish is very delicate. Since this is a cold water fish thus it has a subtle sweet flavour with no random bones throughout it’s body. After just one bite, Jiang Hai is already in love with the taste. Thinking about his abilities, the resulting beef and fish from his farm will definitely be better than the average ones on market, so it will definitely take less than 10 years to get returns on his investments.

“Haha, that’s your problem now boss. We don’t have these connections, so we generally always sell it to the livestock cooperations.” Robins laughed at Jiang Hai’s remark.

In America, when selling livestock, they don’t go looking around for outlets, but directly sell to government at their predefined prices. Of course there are some private buyers, but these prices will never be more the set prices and there is also no guarantee on how low it might drop to. Thus most products are all sold directly to the government, where they then distribute it all over the country at a set price. Products like corn, wheat, beef, lamb, fish and other livestock are all like this. There are fluctuations in prices everywhere but it is never too much.

Since there is no way to transport vegetables over long distances while keeping them fresh, thus the price of a good lettuce can be comparable to standard cuts of beef. A lot of people probably won’t understand the underlying meaning here, but selling vegetables is definitely a great way to make money. For example, the vegetables currently on the table is from Robins’ gardens. He doesn’t have the extra income to buy these vegetables.

The two continued chatting as they ate, and without knowing, they had already finished everything. Seeing the invigorated Jiang Hai, Robins can’t help but ask, “So, Mr. Jiang, what do you plan to do now with the estate?”

Hearing Robins’ question, Jiang Hai thought a bit before replying, “Probably return it back to what it was. Ranching cattle and lamb, farming fishes on the fishery. Brewing some wine is also a possibility.”

“Your decision is very sensible. The ranch is great and very suitable for raising

cattles. There is also a modernized shed for the cows left behind by the previous owner. Just some small fixes and it's good for usage. Other stuff like the ride-on lawn mower is all there. On the dock side, there is already a 150 meter long wharf in place. So docking thousand tonnage ships is not a problem. At the very least there is no need to fix or upgrade it for the next decade or so...." Robins ranted on about how to develop the estate. At the end he carefully asked, "then to develop, you'll need manpower. So can I continue working here?" (6)

"You?" Jiang Hai answered in disbelief. So this is Robins' main purpose tonight.

"Mr. Jiang, I am a veteran cowboy. Here in the Boston region, my skills can speak for themselves. I've previously won awards in Massachusetts, Maine as well as Texas. I've been in this field for more than 20 years, so I can be a real help here." Robins bragged. They all say Americans are all unsophisticated and straightforward, guess that's all lies. Cause there's a scheming one here (7).

Hearing all of this, Jiang Hai can't help it but laugh. But he still agrees with everything Robins said. He really need workers. It doesn't matter if it's cowboys, fishermen, or even brewers. He need them all (8). If he was to go look for them himself, he'll probably get cheated, but if he bring Robins then everything is solved. At the very least Robins was trusted to take care of this place by Philips, so he definitely can be trusted. Strength can be developed later on, but a person's personality is the most important.

"That's not a problem, but what's your current wages?"

Notes

1. Salt, pepper and garlic. What else do you need?
2. marbling: the fat to meat ratio of the beef
3. Omg, my supermarket charges me at least \$5 for a kilo, such rip off! D;
4. Holy sh*t, we're getting ripped off by supermarkets. Damn capitalism >.>
5. The markets in this world are all scammers!! Also a catty = 500 grams
6. Holy sh*t that was a really big loop. -.-
7. Kai: and then there's trump
8. Gotta catch, *cough* hire *cough*, dem all!

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 12: There is still much to do

Chapter 12: There is still much to do

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

Don't think American citizens have better living standards. Yes, they get paid in USD, but they also spend USD. Except for some specialized dishes which are cheaper than the ones in China, everything else is a lot more expensive. Their income really isn't much when compared to the current situation in China.

Other than businessmen and capitalists, everyone else works for their wages. A study of 200 common occupations in America showed that people who are in the oil sector, mathematicians, pharmacists, IT workers, doctors, space engineers, lawyers and air traffic controllers earn the most on average. These people earn at least 100,000 USD annually. Doctors especially can earn more than 180,000 USD a year. This is mainly because doctors charge much higher per hour and see many more patients or 'clients' than others.

This is also the same in China. The normal wages for doctors really isn't a lot, but the job comes with tons of bonuses, and money from medical supplements, drug supplements, and other medical equipment makes the majority of the population envious. Jiang Hai has a friend who is working at a 3rd tier hospital as a nurse, first at the surgery ward and then the emergency ward. In 5 years, his family went from having nothing to having 3 different houses, 2 new cars, one of which is worth more than 300,000 Yuan. And according to him, he is only getting the leftovers. As long as doctors or head nurses want to, then earning a few million yuan is definitely not out of the question. For example, a steel plate used in orthopedic operations, originally costs 5000, but the hospital sells it for 25,000. This 20,000 is pure profits ([1](#)). Deducting the section that belongs to the hospital, doctors can easily receive 6 to 7 thousand. Then there is the follow-up medication. This is where all the money is. If some medicare drug is said to have bad effects as well as side effects, but you still want to use it, then they will prescribe it for you. Under these conditions, who would still use these drugs? Yet, these people constantly call themselves poor. Towards these people Jiang Hai can only say 'f you' and that is about it.

This type of grey income is drastically reduced in America since as long as you pay your taxes then you're pretty much covered by the state healthcare system. But if you don't have any medical insurance, then you're royally screwed. If they do not charge you a couple thousand for a simple cold, then it's because they pity you. Also, all of the doctors incomes in America are open to the public, but they still earn a lot. On average they earn 180,000 annually, they rank number one in annual incomes in America. The difference is pretty obvious. For example a lawyer only earns an average of 110,000 yearly.

Naturally, this has no connections to Jiang Hai and Robins since a farmer only earns 69,000 USD annually, but a cowboy earns much less than that. A cowboy is basically a labourer. They're very similar to those lumberjacks, dock workers and construction workers, with an annual salary of somewhere between 20 to 30 thousand. Robins has a weekly salary of \$616 which is 32,000 annually. To cowboys this much salary is already pretty good since the middle class in America annual salary doesn't go beyond 50,000.

If you do the calculations then sailors earn a bit more. Those fishermen working on internationals fishing trawlers earn 50,000 annually, making them the middle class, but those working in coastal areas pretty much earn the same as cowboys. Hearing this, Jiang Hai calculated a bit before hiring him with a weekly wage of 800 USD. That is roughly 40,000 a year. Hearing this Robins automatically became excited and explained what they need to get the ranch running.

Hearing about everything that needed to be done, Jiang Hai finally understood why managing a ranch is so much more difficult than described in those novels (2). First, they need to replace all the missing equipment in the ranch as well as renovate the whole residential area. This will have to be decided by Jiang Hai as to how complex and luxurious he wants the place to be. Next is to hire more workers. A ranch and a fishery can't be operated by just Jiang Hai and Robins, they require more hands.

The amount of people being hired is proportional to how many heads of cows he is going to raise. With some calculation, the 1200 acres can easily raise 40 thousand heads of cows. However, Jiang Hai is only going to raise 10 thousand first for testing purposes. Especially because the cattle he wants to raise is of

premium grade, not like those average ones. 10 thousand cattles require at least 5 cowboys with some additional shepherd dogs for support, thus increasing the workers required count by 5.

Next, the fishery also need some manpower. A 100 tonnage fishing trawler require at least 3 people, as well as teams on routine patrol duty. Generally 2 people a team is enough, thus requiring at least 5 fishermen. Then there is the winery. Since it is currently winter and there exists unfavorable conditions for growing grapes, thus hiring brewers can wait until next year. Nevertheless, he still requires at least 3 brewers to operate the winery. Like this Jiang Hai needs to employ at least 12 additional workers.

After hiring the required manpower, he needs to solve the transportation problem. Which means buying trucks. Once they have the trucks then they're on the right track. They can go buy cattles, lambs, horses, boats, nets, cages and anything else they might need. Hearing all of this, Jiang Hai kind of regretted buying this place. He generally isn't interested in these types of things, but now he found this much work to do.

"Don't worry boss, I'll help you with all of these things. Half a month is more than enough time to finish all of it." Seeing how Jiang Hai understand none of these things, Robins can only offer his support.

"Well, it can only go like this." Muttered Jiang Hai embarrassingly.

The next day, he had Robins drive him to Philips headquarters in Boston to finish the paperwork of buying this estate as well as to apply for a green card. Normally, it is very difficult to apply for a green card in America. People need to wait in line, then their capitals needs to be checked and so on. Making the whole process quite troublesome. However this is completely different for Jiang Hai since he is is an immigrant investor. Specifically an immigrant who has invested 280 million into an estate with a ranch, fishery and winery. He can also provide at least 10 jobs to people in the agricultural and fishery sector.

Towards these type of investment immigrants, America is 120% welcoming (3). Especially since Jiang Hai is not a fugitive, or seeking political asylum. Thus, towards these kind of investors America has its doors wide open. As such, when Jiang Hai finished signing the papers, he immediately passed the audit and

obtained the right for permanent residency. But this required a period of time to process so he needed to go back to China for sometime.

Jiang Hai is really indifferent about this since he also needed to go back to settle some unfinished business. But before he heads back, he still needs a renovation company to renovate his mansion. The mansion currently is completely barren and everything needs to be redone. This includes a new paint job for the walls, new hardwood flooring, central heating, tiles for both the kitchens and bathrooms, bathtubs, toilets, beds, closets, refrigerators, ovens, stoves and so on. Jiang Hai followed the design from the renovation company and paid 1.2 million USD for the makeover. This made the other side extremely excited as a job as profitable as this is extremely rare.

Having settled every thing that needs to be done on this side, Jiang Hai booked a plane to return back to China. If there is any problems then Robins is the one in charge. This is a trial by fire since if he screws this up then he basically can go packing and find a new employee. As such Robins became every strict on the renovators. Since Jiang Hai does not care about the process but only the result, so when he returns, Robins should have finished overseeing the full renovation.

After staying 2 more days at the estate, Jiang Hai boarded a plane headed to Los Angeles, then transferred to a flight back to China. It might be because of his credit card, but the seat he received on the Airbus A380 was first class. This airbus not only has a bar, a dining room, touchscreen TV, but also real leather arm chairs and private rooms for first class passengers on the second deck. He has never experienced flying in these type of planes. When he flew to America he only had a bed, but when he went back he also had a private room? (4)

Notes

[1.](#) This is sad for people who can't afford it, hopefully this is just for novel flavour, and the difference between item cost and selling cost isn't as exaggerated in real life q.q

[2.](#) Yup definitely credible, peer-reviewed sources.

[3.](#) Lol, the power of money

[4.](#) Kai: It's his first time flying, he had a bed, and is still complaining, what about me~ v.v

Chapter 13: The small things

Chapter 13: The small things

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Wow, no wonder it is this comfortable. One return trip ticket is \$47,000. This is freaking daylight robbery.” After returning back to Beijing international airport, a car from the hotel that Jiang Hai had reservations with is already waiting. After picking him up, it quickly brought him to the hotel. Currently he is in his room examining his balance; this has now become one of Jiang Hai’s recent hobbies. It cannot be helped. After being broke for this many years, and then suddenly receiving a windfall. If he does not check a couple times a day then he’s always got a feeling that this is fake.

Before he left, his entire worth is 332,045,211 USD. Among all of that, 330 million is from selling that piece of pink diamond, 2 million from all the other gems, and the last 45 thousand is made up of selling flowers, crystals and his original savings. Thinking about it makes him pretty sorrowful. I’m already so old, but after selling the house all I got in return is 10 thousand Yuan. Thinking back to all that happened to his family last year, Jiang Hai can’t help but sigh. In the brief period of a month he went from a broke ass beggar to one of the youngest billionaires in the world.

“No point thinking about it. First thing to do after getting back to Harbin tomorrow, is to see dad and mom, then buy back our old house, and finally see those brothers of mine. Coming back in the future will be pretty troublesome now.” Quickly switching his train of thoughts away from think about future problems, and directly went into a deep slumber to await the incoming future.

People live only once, plants live for a season, seeking nothing but happiness. Just thinking about passing each day miserably is already enough to have nightmares. He doesn’t want to be like those white collar workers who are like motivationless and ambitionless zombies. Even if his life is hell, his will still live on to seeking his happiness. Especially now, when he’s got all this money ([1](#)).

The next day, after being woken up by the front desk, he cleaned himself up,

got dressed, ate the complimentary breakfast and boarded a plane headed towards Harbin. When he got off the plane in Harbin, it just happened to be noon. Catching a taxi to one of his favorite restaurants, he ate his favorite sweet and sour pork and then went to the crematorium. Because his parents went too quickly at the time, he didn't have time to prepare a cemetery for them, so he can only keep it there for now. Since he doesn't lack money anymore, thus finding a good grave for them is not a problem. However, since they're already here, then they can only be moved after three years. This is a basic sign of respect towards the dead. It has only been a year since their death so there is no rush. Finished seeing his parents, with the usual practise of light incense and burning paper money, he called a taxi and went to his old home.

However at this point in time, this house belonged to someone else. A year ago, when it was just him and his mom, they sold the house to a pair of newlyweds. At the time, they had no choice, but now with all this money; he can easily get the house back.

knock knock

A woman holding a newborn answered the knocking. The woman does not look much older than Jiang Hai, and the child she's holding is no more than a couple of months old. Unable to imagine how the pair already got a child in less than a year.

"Hello, but what is the problem?" The woman open the door and was shocked to see Jiang Hai the previous owner of this house.

"Um..." Seeing the woman's shocked expression, Jiang Hai hesitated because the words he's about to say is kind of hard to say.

"Who is it honey?" At this moment, a man wearing an apron came out. Seeing that it's Jiang Hai, he also can't help but be shocked. Seeing the pair, Jiang Hai gathered up his courage and went forward with his plan of buying back the house.

To him this house is not merely a house anymore, but rather memories of his parents. Some people deliberately try to forget the past and move on, but clearly Jiang Hai is not the type. Of course, the following negotiations went pretty smoothly. His old house is only 48 square meters big. After some previous

renovations, there is roughly 40 square meters of usable space. Following market price of 8000 per square meter, 48 square meter is only 380,000 Yuan. At the time the pair bought the house they only paid 360,000. What can he do, his family urgently needed the money.

At least now, Jiang Hai is back with lots of money so of course he won't rip the couple off. Currently, housing prices in those world famous cities is pretty expensive. But in cities like Harbin there is no really fluctuation in the market. When Jiang Hai threw an offer of 600,000 for the house, the couple has no reason to reject this easy money. As such the negotiations went by very quickly. All the couple have to do is move out, which is a bit tedious, but this 600 thousand is more than enough for them purchase a grander house and then some. So this is 100% worth it for the couple. The two sides quickly agreed and decided to sign all the paperwork tomorrow.

After the paperwork was signed and formalities completed, they have 10 days to move out. As to where the couple will live during this transition period is not of Jiang Hai's concern. Now he's completed one of the major tasks he needed to do during this time in China.

Leaving his house and seeing the time, those friends of his should have gotten off work by now. Thinking of this, he quickly called one of them. Not much time passed before a slightly boring voice picked up.

"Hello?" Hearing the familiar voice on the other side, Jiang Hai can't help but smile.

"Yo, you still haven't gotten up yet? It's already dark!" Jiang Hai yelled at the phone.

"Hello? Wait, this number, fk, Jiang Hai where did you go recently? Since when did you go dark?" Hearing Jiang Hai's voice, the other side can't help but curse back.

"Haha, this grandpa of yours hit the jackpot and returned in glory! Alright, stop sleeping, get up and come to dinner with us. I'll contact the rest of them." Jiang Hai answered smilingly.

"You ****insert curses here****, wait for me. Let me wash up, where are you and need me to pick you up?" The person on the other side ridiculed.

“Hurry up, I’m at home.” Hearing the reply, Jiang Hai answered with just one line and hung up. After calling the others and under their curses, 10 minutes passed before a minivan showed up downstairs. Rolling down the windows, a very familiar face showed up in front of Jiang Hai.

“So, where the heck did you disappear to? Get on!” Hearing the familiar voice, Jiang Hai sat down on the shotgun seat.

“Didn’t I tell you, I hit the jackpot and came back to brag about it.” Jiang Hai replied in self-important manner.

“The details dude. You disappeared for almost 2 months, where you run off to?” Hearing Jiang Hai’s reply, this person clearly did not believe it. So asked with a very bad mood.

“I’ll tell you when everyone’s here.” Seeing Jiang Hai unwilling to explain further, this friend of his can only give up and ask, “Where to?”

“Secret BBQ shop, for those skewers.” Jiang Hai happily point to a destination.

Not much time after, this van arrived in front of a small barbeque shop. Currently in front of this store is a couple of familiar cars. Seeing these these cars, the two said nothing, parked the car and went in. As soon as they enter, they see a table with 3 young people on their cell phones.

“Sh*t, this dude’s still alive? So what are you up to now after two months of going dark.” Seeing the three, Jiang Hai can’t help but slap one of them hard on the back. Although he didn’t use much strength but you can still hear the sound, which scared that friend of his shitless. Seeing that it’s only Jiang Hai, the first thing he did is throw middle fingers at him.

“Alright sit, we’re just waiting on you. I’ve already called for 20 skewers of beef tendons, 20 pork belly skewers, 10 kidney skewers, 10 skewers of chicken wings, and a pot of tripe. This probably not enough, so what else do you guys want?” Hearing this person’s voice, the rest of them all raised their heads and saw the two. The shortest of the bunch quickly threw out the menu and stated in an anxious manner.

“Boss, every time you say you’re hungry but how much can you really eat?” Hearing this, one of the other two retorted back. Which was received with a

round of laughs.

“No problem, I’ll finish the leftovers for you guys.” See these couple of brothers, Jiang Hai stated happily. He also called for a whole roast squid, a whole roast cod, plus an additional 20 skewers of pork belly, 10 skewers of chicken heart and gizzards each. 100 skewers for 5 people is probably enough. If this is still not enough then there is always the complementary bread and geda soup (2). After finishing ordering, everyone sat down and started endless rounds of laughter.

“So where did you run off to? Not even a letter, I thought you got eliminated and got dumped somewhere by Qi Li’s ex-boyfriend.”

Notes

1. dude, where did your mind wonder to? O.O

2. Og: 疙瘩汤 -> Dough Drop and Assorted Vegetable Soup, made from dough, eggs, and tomatoes



Images from <http://baike.baidu.com/view/63843.htm> (Bewarned it’s all chinese)

Tl: Due to the crampedness of cities in China, all houses there are pretty much like apartments in developed nations. If you want to an individual house then you’re pretty much buying a mansion equivalent in first world countries.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 14: Brothers

Chapter 14: Brothers

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“So where did you run off to? Not even a letter, I thought you got eliminated and got dumped somewhere by Qi Li’s ex-boyfriend.” That ‘boss’ asked. He was clearly in a bad mood.

“I also asked, but he said to wait until everyone’s here” The friend that picked up Jiang Hai replied.

Hearing these questions, Jiang Hai can only make up a story to cover up the truth. The dragon pearl and the dragon tattoo are secrets that he does not intend to share with anyone. Not his friend, nor his wife. He intends to bring this secret with him to the grave. However, he still needs a cover story for all these random fortunes he received.

“In recent months I was completely out of it. I decided to take sometime off to travel after mourning for my mother. When I was in Xinjing, I found this rock in the Gobi desert....” For these close knit friends of his, Jiang Hai can only make up a somewhat legit story for them.

This story is actually really simple. He found some rocks in the desert, and later found out they were worth a lot. So when he came back, he sold it all to an auction house. Among them is a piece worth several hundred million. He then used this to buy an estate with a farm, a ranch, a fishery, and a winery. He just finished signing those documents, got his green card and is just now waiting for it to take effect.

“Dude, we didn’t order anything to drink yet, how are you drunk?” Hearing Jiang Hai’s story, these friends of his clearly don’t believe him. Seriously, this can’t be real right?

“ *cough*, you’re drunk, this is all the truth, here is the green card that I mentioned.” Seeing the disbelief in their eyes, Jiang Hai can only pull out his green card as proof for them to see. Most people have heard of this green card

thing, but have never seen it in person. To be honest, a green card is really called a permanent resident card. Currently, China also has this type of green card. These cards are identification cards attesting to the permanent resident status of a foreigner. It is a card with a green backing, 3 sets of serial number at the bottom, a picture of the person on the left, personal information in the middle, and finally their fingerprint on the right.

To be fair, Jiang Hai has also never seen a green card until he received his recently. Seeing Jiang Hai's green card, these friends of his really can't tell what it is. Considering it might actually be real, their view of Jiang Hai changed from doubt to curiosity.

"The luck of this dude is unreal, picking up a random rock on the ground and it's worth so much. Never thought out of all of us here, you would be the first to get rich." The driver stated strangely.

"Hehe, when luck comes, it's not like you can block it." Jiang Hai put away his green card and stated smugly.

"No this won't do, you're paying all our bills tonight. Waiter! Give us 10 big skewers of kidneys." Seeing that smug look on Jiang Hai's face, the boss can't help but call out.

"Sure, no problem! Tonight I'm going to make you guys eat till you barf." Jiang Hai happily stated.

Jiang Hai came from a very simple family, as such, his friends had simple backgrounds as well. He never believed that one day he would have to lie to them. Unlike those third generation statesmen or those second generation rich merchants who have to go around with fake identities, he is just an ordinary citizen. So are his friends.

The one who picked him up earlier is called Xu Wei, and they're from the same high school. His family circumstance is very ordinary, his father died while he was in high school, so his mother supported him all these years alone. His family never had much savings to begin with, so by selling some of their family's liquid assets of 2 houses, they scraped by. After finishing high school, he didn't go to university but rather went to find a job.

After all these years, he never had any particular specialized skills so of course

he didn't earn big money. Later on he got introduced to a construction company, so he bought a minivan last year and specialized in bringing workers to construction sites. A good day would be 200+ Yuan, a bad day would mean nothing. On a good month, he can earn up to 5000 Yuan. Since winter comes early ([1](#)) in the north, once snow falls the construction sites become abandoned until next spring. Meaning, for at least 5 months he has got nothing to do. As such, he doesn't earn a lot, but enough to get by.

The one Jiang Hai slapped previously is Huang Yunfei. A childhood friend. One year younger than him, but they grew up together so of course they're tight. He lives in the building behind Jiang Hai's house and his father is a section chief in the logistics department of a nearby hospital. Although he is a section chief, so you'd think he earns a lot, but he is really in charge of cleaning and landcare. Aka, he manages the janitors, no real profits, just wages from cold hard labour. The dude himself never liked studying so after graduating from university, got a job at the collections office in the same hospital with no real foreseeable future at the moment.

On the other side are two people. The boss Fu Yuan, Jiang Hai's middle school classmate. Because he lagged behind for a year thus became friends with Jiang Hai. His dad is the department head of security in a university, with 6 people working for him. His main job is to settle disputes on campus, but he has no control over the security guards at the main gates. Only upside is everyone knows him, he even owns a dry cleaner and a copy house on campus. Thus he is the only one here with a good family situation, but this is all nothing in front of those rich people.

Finally there is Xiang Hua, also Jiang Hai's middle school classmate. He is currently a chauffeur for his father-in-law, his is also the only here apart from Jiang Hai who's gotten married. The only difference between the two unyielding ladies is size of their family business. This one here only owns a small machinery plant worth 1.8 million Yuan. Unlike Qi Li, his wife loves him very much, his father-in-law is also pretty good towards him hence the chauffeur job.

These 4 are Jiang Hai's closest friends. Jiang Hai really liked to make friends when he was little, but they all gradually fell of the grid after university. Towards these people, he's got no interest to restart their friendship. After the series of

unfortunate events which happened to his family and the wedding, the only ones he is still in contact with is just these 4; solidifying their bonds.

They didn't have to wait long before the waiters brought over their skewer orders and they all dug in. If we're talking about skewers, then most people would immediately think about Xinjiang or Inner Mongolia. The people grew up with skewered meats, so of course the lamb from there is delicious when skewered. But according to Jiang Hai's taste, the best tasting lamb skewer is from Harbin. Everyone has different tastes, but pretty much most southerners will say the skewers in Harbin is overly salty, but never say it taste bad.

Inner Mongolia's roast lamb is pretty famous. No matter if it's a whole lamb or meat skewers; they all taste great. This is an undeniable fact, but they suck at everything else including chicken wings, gEDA soup, and honeyed pork belly. Xinjing is pretty much the same as Inner Mongolia. The other stuff all taste average. This is also why Jiang Hai likes Harbin's cuisine better.

Following the start of the service, the 5 of them became like the hurricane. By the end, nothing is left untouched and unfinished. Ever since the dragon pearl merged with his body, Jiang Hai has found his body change slightly. For example, his appetite has drastically increased, if he could only finished 20 skewers before feeling full, then now he needs at least 40 or 50 skewers. Thinking back to the roast beef back in boston. Of a 10 pound piece, Jiang Hai single handedly finished half of it. So of course 100 skewers won't satisfy them, thus 30 more was called for. By the end, the bill came to over 500 Yuan which is not very little. Especially when there is only the 5 of them. This type of appetite in Harbin can be considered to be the rarely spotted heavy eaters.

"Now what? We can't just disband after a meal right?" When they paid the bill, Fu Yuan looked at his cell phone to see that it's only 6pm. This is golden party time, but where are they gonna go?

"KTV? Or find a place for mahjong?" Hearing the word play, everyone got excited.

"What KTV? I'm gonna go take a bath first. 2 months without a bath, I feel like a dirtman." On this side, Jiang Hai rejected them all since he would rather take a bath first.

“Ok, bath it is. Let’s go then!” Hearing Jiang Hai words, everyone can’t help but laugh. They left the small restaurant and drove to one of their commonly used bath centers ([2](#)).

This particular bath center isn’t very big, but to Jiang Hai’s group it is enough. 39 Yuan a ticket for a bath, a shower, salting, sauna, a rest, a choice of foot massage, cupping therapy, or a full body massage ([3](#)). Receiving so many services is well worth it for the price they paid, which is also why Jiang Hai and the others are regulars here.

Now when Jiang Hai said bathing, the first thing they thought of is here. So the group drove here, paid the 39 Yuan entrance fee and went in ([4](#)).

Note

[1](#). Hue, winter is coming!!

[2](#). No, this is just a regular bath house nothing more, nothing less. (Kai: Public bathhouse)

[3](#). Kai: 6 bucks for all that, I’m missing out q.q

[4](#). Kai: And made sure to not drop their soap x)

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 15: Return to Boston

Chapter 15: Return to Boston

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

The sounds of dripping water can be heard as a group of almost naked men walk towards the clear warm pool. They sat down on one side of the pool and watched whatever T.V. show is being broadcasted on the opposite wall.

Bathing, a completely different concept in the North than in the South.

Bath houses in the south existed centuries ago, but they all disappeared within the last couple of decades. It is not because of a lack of water, or the lukewarm weather during winter. Rather, compared to paying money for a bath, boiling water and washing at home is much more economical. Especially when you can take a bath whenever you want. Due to these reasons, bathhouses in the south disappeared. The ones that still exist are the ones that offer 'special' services ([1](#)). Of course there still are some traditional ones, but they are really hard to find.

So if a northerner tell a southerner that he is going to take a bath in a bath house, the southerner will mistaken him for going to get you know what and not really a bath. The 'special' services in the north tend to be based around the massage parlour.

Winter is really cold in the North, so most families do not have the ability to fund themselves to take a bath whenever they want. Thus keeping the bath housing sector healthy and running. As more and more people began to accept bathing in public baths, it to the development of bathing culture. For example a soaking bath, a rubbing bath, salting and so on. These all count as distinguishing features in northern bathing houses, especially when some of the bathing houses in the south don't even have things like scrubbing towels. They would use shower sponges or regular towels as replacement, but to the northerners you can't really scrub yourself clean with them.

After having bathing houses for so long, people still have the habit of taking a bath in a bathing house. Even if they have boilers at home. A cold shower a day in the summer to keep the people cool and refreshed. A warm shower every

couple of days during the winter, but this still can't stop people from going to bathing houses every couple of weeks.

Jiang Hai is a pure northerner. So of course he loves to take baths. Harbin is within the province of Heilongjiang, so it is never missing sources of fresh water, especially when it contains 2 of the 5 the longest rivers in China; the Amur River and the Songhua River. As such, the concept of water shortages in the north is never present near Harbin. This is also why it can become the breadbasket of the whole nation. Being influenced by his parents since he was young, Jiang Hai fell in love with soaking baths in particular. No northern men can reject the idea of taking a soak especially when you can enjoy your favorite beverage on the side.

"You're going to develop in America from now on?" Seeing Jiang Hai enjoying himself, Fu Yuan asked after taking a sip of his tea.

"En. If there aren't any accidents, then yes, I will be earning my riches there." Answered Jiang Hai.

"He is investing there. If he doesn't go develop there, then it is a pity. Besides, there are all those beautiful women in America (2)." Xiang Hua butted in at exactly this moment.

"Fk dude, did you get rejected by you wife too hard recently? The first thing you think of in America is women. Is that their specialty?" Xu Wei exploded with a look of despise upon hearing what Xiang Hua had to say.

"Exactly, what is there to women? Especially with that size 8 piece of Jiang Hai's, how can it fit into a size 16 nut? (3)" Huang Yuanfei cut in with a half joking half malicious comment.

"What the Fk! You guys are actually looking down on my 22cm steel rod?" Jiang Hai taunted angrily.

This banter shouldn't be taken seriously, but Jiang Hai has found out recently that he is entering puberty again. As his body was turning stronger, it is also changing. Originally Jiang Hai is only 6'2" but recently it feels like he has somehow gotten taller. This is definitely inexplicable.

"Sh*t man, if you had a 22cm steel rod the why is your wife still in Beijing?" Hearing Jiang Hai's taunt, Fu Yuan asked back. Among friends there is no point in

hiding embarrassing stories, they'll drag it all out.

"She never gave me the chance to show off this magnificent masterpiece." Jiang Hai answered back with a look full of disdain plus a bunch of curses.

Hearing this, everyone bursted out laughing since they all know the whole story. The heavy atmosphere was quickly diluted a lot.

"If you guys got time in the future, you can come to my place to hang. I'll cover all but airplane expenses." Jiang Hai said to all of these close friends.

To be frank, he really doesn't care if he pays for their tickets or not, but he's still got save some face for these buddies of his (4). Even if he wants to cover all their expenses, they won't agree to it.

"You said it. Just wait for all of us to come at once and wreck this tyrant (5)." Hearing Jiang Hai's offer, the whole group smiled.

"Of course, don't worry about it."

Soon, everyone went to get a rub down, then a massage in the lounge. It is obviously clear to the regulars that it doesn't matter what type of massage you get, all the masseurs are male. The only girls here are the ones providing health care treatments, and they all look very, um, normal? In some places, these masseuse will massage into some sensitive area, but here it is all normal. Also when you see their faces, you will without a doubt lose all interest in whatever you were thinking of doing.

After the massage they went into the sauna. While in the sauna there are many different activities such as chess, chinese checkers, watching T.V. and so on. They fooled around till past 10 before disbanding. As for Jiang Hai, he rented a room upstairs and stayed here for the night.

The next day, Jiang Hai met up with the family and handed this completed documents to the housing management office for transfer of ownership. There is a wait period of 10 days before the transfer becomes active, as such Jiang Hai needs to stay here for an extra 10 days.

At the same time, Jiang Hai can properly get together with this band of misfits. He found a random 3 star hotel and opened a room as temporary residence. The following 10 days, can only be described as 10 nights of party. Mainly because

everyone drove on the first day so they couldn't drink.

These few days can be considered to be giving Jiang Hai farewell dinners so everyone rotated for the bills. Everybody also drank to their delight. If you really want to bring it up then Harbin has three specialties. One is the ice lanterns. The annual ice and snow show in Harbin is the city's biggest label.

The second would be the food here. such as ice cream, bread and stuff. However to the locals, they prefer modern popsicles and have no particular interest in any kind of bread. Although the drink 'kvass' is another story altogether. There is only 2 brands of kvass on market, the one from wahaha is pretty much a fake. Even though it sells great, but it's taste it really meh. The one that Jiang Hai drink is from Qiulin. This is the only one that has an authentic taste, not too sweet and retains a wonderful smell of bread. Not only does it help with hangovers, it also helps with hunger.

And thirdly is the beer. Harbin's beer is the first beer manufactured, and also the first branded beer. Due to good water quality, the crops grown from it are also great, so of course the brewed beer isn't bad. At the time, it was really hard to sell this beer since it had to compete with Qingdao and Yanjing outside and snowflakes locally. However the true locals love Harbin beer, even if it's snowflakes, the sales in Harbin is drastically different than that of other parts of the country.

Sadly, Jiang Hai's love for beer can only be satisfied by dark brews overseas. To be honest Jiang Hai has no good opinion for both dark brews as well as white lagers. Dark brews cost too much and taste like coffee plus beer. White lagers are even more ridiculous since it's pretty much beer with brandy ([6](#)).

Taking of advantage of being in Harbin, they could drink Harbin beer, to his delight. Harbin also has another defining feature. The beautiful girls. It's advised to approach with caution. It is much better to just enjoy the view, especially since the girls here all have anger management problems. If you really think of them as products then you'll probably get destroyed in more than one way. Girls in other areas generally have a weak and delicate personality, but these types of girls is too god damn rare in Harbin.

Happy time always goes by quickly, at least in Jiang Hai's eyes this is true. 10

days passed in a flash. The days go by seriously quick and all you do is eat drink and party.

In the wake of his original house falling under his name again ([7](#)) and having bought the stuff that needs to be bought and packed the things that need to be packed, he bid farewell to his buddies and got on a plane from Harbin to Beijing. From there he transferred to that airbus and returned to America.

The trip back is the same as the return trip. There is no air route from China directly to Boston, so he needs to transfer enroute from San Francisco, Los Angeles, or Chicago. When he finally returned to his estate, the whole residence had changed.

Notes

- [1.](#) He, special, giggty, alright!
- [2.](#) They are all Quagmire approved.
- [3.](#) Kids we're definitely talking about construction here. Yup. Definitely.
- [4.](#) TI: 升米恩, 斗米仇 general meaning: people will remember your acts during their times of need and pay back in the same way when you're in trouble
- [5.](#) 打土豪 pretty much means we're gonna leach of you a lot in this case
- [6.](#) Beer lovers don't hate me, hate the author!! I'm only the messenger!!
- [7.](#) Having a green card doesn't mean you automatically switch your nationality, thus at this point in time Jiang Hai is still a chinese citizen but with the right to stay in america.

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 16: New home

Chapter 16: New home

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“So boss, do you like the new look?” Robins asked smiling and explained further, “I supervised everything. The roof, the main doors, even the supporting pillars are all stuff that I instructed them to add. This \$1.2 million renovation can’t only be around the stuff they outlined in their design, so these additions are pretty much freebies. To be honest, if it wasn’t for the fact that you had already paid everything upfront, I would never let them earn this \$1.2 million so easily.”

“What is this....” Gazing at the building in front of him, Jiang Hai was just speechless. The original mansion in front of him was very simplistic. A western two and a half floor mansion with an attic, which doesn’t really count. The two floor top tier mansion took up a large piece of real estate. With grassland and the beach in the background, it looked gorgeous and harmonious.

In the original design all he wanted to do was renovate the inside according to the given design. The interior design needed to be top notch, but there was no need to touch the outside. From the looks of thing, Robins did not follow the boss’ instructions. The changes he made to the outer appearance really scared Jiang Hai.

The mansion currently in front of him is still the same mansion, but he doesn’t understand what Robins was thinking; he actually completely changed the outer appearance of the mansion. Now the mansion looks like a building from Ancient China with the red and green paint, and curved corners. The main thing is the new red pillars and the passage it makes.

There really isn’t any feeling of solidity being passed here, so let’s give an example. If there is a school near where you live and their main building looks like one from the ancient ages, then this is what Jiang Hai’s mansion looks like. Well except his mansion is a bit larger, shorter and it’s got a passageway outside.

“This is my special request to the renovation company after doing some

research into structures in China. To be honest I've never thought Chinese's structural specialties look this good." Robins commented on the building in front of him without any feelings of incorrection. But towards this appearance, Jiang Hai only feels embarrassment and shame. Thinking of how this is going to be his permanent residence, he's even got feelings of tearing the whole thing down and redoing it ([1](#)).

'Such a disgrace!' He had never thought that after leaving school dorms for so long, he would again be moving back into building with a dorm like outer appearance. Such irony. Well there is no way he can point out what is wrong to Robins, since he was only trying to get into Jiang Hai's good books, but he never would have imagined that changes like this only got into Jiang Hai's bad books. Seeing Jiang Hai's attitude that is on the verge of ripping someone apart, Robins shut up pretty quickly. But he still doesn't understand, since Jiang Hai should feel happy that the mansion got renovated like this.

sigh "Forget it. We'll talk about it later." Jiang Hai let out a long sigh, hopefully this dude didn't bring his crazy ideas inside. If he did, then Jiang Hai might really tear it all down and redo the whole renovation.

"Alright!" Hearing Jiang Hai's commands, Robins pressed the gas pedal and continued towards the mansion.

After getting out of the car and seeing the interior of the mansion, Jiang Hai is pretty satisfied with his work. Originally there was only one well worn out road from the entrance of the estate to the mansion. This road hasn't been maintained for many years resulting in lots of potholes and stuff like weeds. This time Robins paid special attention to this road. By using the leftover materials he fixed the road and create a small parking lot outside.

As such there are now two parking lots in estate; one out doors for the to be guests and one under the mansion for personal uses. With a total of 16 parking spaces, this is pretty much enough for everyday use. It's not like Jiang Hai will open restaurants and stuff, so where would he find all these guests?

Going inside the mansion, Jiang Hai can only feel grateful, since Robins did not bring his wild ideas inside. Thus the interior design is from the original plans. A large chandelier in the entrance hall, with a layer of carpet on top of the original

hardwood flooring. A couch in the middle with wine racks and a closet on the side all followed the original design specs.

Since this is the west, then it must have a western feel to it. If it has too much chinese influence then it would definitely feel out of place. As for chinese influence, then at most there can be some carvings or decorations. If there is more, than it will be too much. Seeing the living room, kitchen, bathroom and all the rooms on the second floor, Jiang Hai can finally relax. He is very satisfied, but the school building appearance is a big turn off.

Seeing Jiang Hai's satisfaction, Robins can also relax. Being able to help out your boss is something to be happy about. Immediately, he went back to prepare dinner. After all, the mansion is just able to house people; it doesn't have any food stored yet. Therefore, he reckons he'll have to help Jiang Hai with his meals. However, Jiang Hai is not really a stingy person. So before he left, he had already paid Robins his monthly wage of 3200 with an additional 800 for his meals when he came back.

After Robins left, Jiang Hai began to carefully examine his room. In fact, his room within the mansion is pretty much like a house within a house. Apart from his master bedroom, there are two other rooms. Currently, his master bedroom has been fully decorated. Except for a fixed bed, there is a T.V. on the opposite wall. He had specially ordered this T.V. because this is a brand new laser T.V. also known as no screen T.V. This type of television can broadcast both 2D as well as 3D images on a 100" display platform. This T.V. alone costs \$10,000. Within the entire mansion, there is only one such T.V..

On the other side of the bed is a corner office table. Currently it has nothing on it, but that's only for now. All the cables have been prepared, So all he has to do is plug in. There is also a wall phone on top of the headboard. This phone not only can contact outside, but can also contact anyone within the estate. Apart from these, the closet, wallpaper, carpet and so on have all either been replaced or fixed. The room's also got a small fridge for cold drinks.

Apart from his master bedroom, the other two guest rooms have also been decorated. Stuff like beds, cabinets, T.V.s, internet and so on have all been installed. The living room outside is much smaller than the one down stairs but it's renovation cost is still sky high. Not only is there a brand new 70" flat screen

T.V., but even the toilet and bathtub in the bathrooms have been replaced. Everything was imported from Europe. Jiang Hai's room can be said to be comparable to presidential suites in 5 star hotels.

Even in Jiang Hai's view, if this mansion is only for him then it is kind of redundant. But this is his home now, so there is really not much more to say. Examining as he went, Jiang Hai felt like he turned into a country bumpkin. But to be honest apart from the small mistake outside, the whole renovation can be said to be pitch perfect.

Giving no time for Jiang Hai to accept his new home, Robins came to inform him that dinner is ready. So he quickly went downstairs and arrived at Robins' residence. Tonight's dinner still consisted of beef and fish, but there is also a pot of chowder.

Originally Boston belonged to England, New England to be exact. So the cuisine here is very similar to those in England. England's cuisine is pretty much made up of potatoes, more potatoes, even more potatoes, even even more potatoes, even even even more potatoes, and some roasted meats ([2](#)).

Even after a 100 or so years, Boston's cuisine hasn't really changed. Although eating beef and seafood is possible, residents of Boston can't really eat the same foods over and over. For a new taste, they can eat chowder, with the main ingredient of potatoes. Adding some veggies and clams creates a greater depth of flavour.

If Jiang Hai had to eat this day in, day out, then he'll probably lose it. But if it's only occasionally then it's perfectly fine. Especially the beef. To someone who loves everything beef, then even after eating the same thing for months on end, they still won't get tired of it. Jiang Hai is just like these people, he loves everything beef.

This meal left Jiang Hai pretty satisfied. But after the meal came the business talks.

"Boss, it's almost late fall. If we don't buy cows soon then it'll be too late. We also need to hire more cowboys to handle all the cows. When should we get started?" Robins pointed out the things that came first on the priority list.

Notes

1. Think of it this way: during school you lived in the dorms since you're poor and broke, but when you got rich and renovated your house, the result is a house that again looks like your dorm building. How would you feel?

2. Would you like to have fries with that? Kai: and potato gravy

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 17: Inspection

Chapter 17: Inspections

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

In America, a city's size and economy is not determined by how much land it covers or the size of its population.

You can see this during NBA competitions. The Suns are from Phoenix, America's 6th largest city in terms of population, but it's really not a big city. The Spurs come from San Antonio, who rank 9th, also not a large city. The 10th ranked Detroit, 12th ranked Indianapolis, 21st ranked Seattle, 22nd Denver and so on. All of these cities can't be considered big cities. Big cities are determined by the size of their metropolis.

Currently in America there are only 10 cities that can be considered to be major cities of the country ([1](#)). First on the list is of course New York. All of New York state, Long Island, and north New Jersey can all be considered part of New York city. Next would be Greater Los Angeles. Its metropolitan area consists of Los Angeles, Long Beach and Santa Ana. Greater Chicago area include Naperville and Michigan City. Washington metropolitan area consist of Washinton DC, Arlington and Alexandria. Houston, Sugar Land, and The Woodlands make up Greater Houston. Dallas, Fort Worth, and Arlington form the Dallas–Fort Worth metroplex. Greater Philadelphia is made up of Philadelphia, Camden and Wilmington. There is also the San Francisco-Oakland-Hayward, CA Metropolitan Statistical Area (San Francisco Metropolitan Area), the Atlanta-Sandy Springs-Roswell, GA Metropolitan Statistical Area (Metro Atlanta). And lastly Greater Boston made up of Boston, Worcester, and Providence.

To be specific, the city of Boston is really small. It is also the smallest city out of all the major cities. The city was constructed when the Europeans first settled here. At the time the city was perfectly fine. But if you look at the city now, then the city can only be said to be short and small. It's streets are also clogged with traffic, sometimes it's even worse than the traffic jam in Beijing ([2](#)).

It might be because people are paying special attention to Boston. So

townships like Winthrop, Revere, Chelsea, Avery, Somerville, Cambridge, Watertown, Newton, Brookline, Needham, Dedham, Canton, Milton and Quincy who all surround Boston can also be considered to be part of Greater Boston. This is just like districts within China's cities. The actual city is only a small part of the district, everyone else is added in later on. Which also explains the later existence of county level regions.

Jiang Hai is currently living in Winthrop, so if he says he's living in Boston, then he is in Boston but also not really in Boston. Everyone has their own view on this matter.

After confirming the things on the priority list, Jiang Hai and his one and only employee went on an examination of the current state of the estate the second day. They also made a list of what needs to be replaced and what can still be used.

Currently, there can be said to be a lot of stuff in the estate, but not really. A total of 4 ATVs, which have been in operation for more than 10 years. The fact that it can still be ridden makes it quite a miracle. Hence they need to be replaced. At current market price of 20 to 30 thousand USD, it isn't that bad. A lawn mower, that still can be used but need spare parts. In Jiang Hai's view you might as well replace it. A large tractor which can still be considered new even after 10 years. The previous owner's thoughts were pretty well rounded, if the beef market is bad then he can sell the wheat and other vegetables grown in the fields. Sadly he went broke and now everything belongs to Jiang Hai.

There is also a shed for cows and a shed for horses. It was originally built to be very sturdy, so during renovations, Lewis (3) had people fix up these two sheds with some of the leftover materials. Now, all they need is to have some people clean up the place and it's good for use.

As for the fishery, Robins doesn't have much knowledge in this field. So Jiang Hai went for a swim in the sea during noon. He can breathe underwater so of course he can stay out for a long time, but he is still afraid to travel too far from land.

There are many dangers underwater. Let us not even mention those tiger sharks and killer whales. Solely by poisonous jellyfish, sea snake and the like are

enough to wreck him underwater. Jiang Hai does not know if his tattoo is enough to handle these creatures, but if a several meter long shark shows up then he's got absolutely no chance of victory. At least, until he ranks up.

Therefore he didn't swim too far out. However Jiang Hai is pretty happy with the current state of the fishery. This is a privately owned fishery; in the seven years this place stayed in the hands of Phillips, it's massive amount of petty lawyers kept this place's environment well protected.

Soon, Jiang Hai saw lots of coral reefs. Although his fishery and the reef aren't connected yet, it is still great for both the scenery as well as the fish. From the looks of things, there is no need to grow more corals, all he has to do safeguard it. There are lot of fish species living within the reef. There are some which Jiang Hai can identify, such as the atlantic cod that he previously ate. This species is slightly different from its counterpart in the pacific as it is slightly larger in mass.

In particular, after seven years of protection, there are thousands of cod within the region. They are divided into many different shoals, swimming around near the surface. Shockingly the largest of these has already grow to over two meters long. Apart from large cod, there is also large amounts of herring. This species is also much sought after in western society mainly due to having only a soft spine, sadly, it's just too damn small ([4](#)).

There are also many other species. Down on the seabed, there are many flounders, and in the mid-upper layer are lots of sea bass, sea breams, abnormal amounts of barracuda and croakers, red in colour as well as the occasional grey ones. In coastal waters, there are also many anadromous species such as the chum salmon or the pacific salmon and so on.

What really peaked Jiang Hai's interest is not these, but rather it is the big sea cucumbers, giant sea crabs, and those giant lobsters on the seabed. Especially when lobsters from the Boston region can be considered to be the world's greatest lobster. These lobsters are called Boston lobster, but also commonly known as Maine lobster. The flavour is traditionally known to be top notch, but Jiang Hai has never tasted it before. Just as he was about to take a couple back for a taste test, his body suddenly froze.

Having this much marine animals here, then there will always be predators. For

example sharks. What Jiang Hai saw right at that moment is a three meter long shark. Without even figuring what type it is, he was scared shitless and quickly swam back to shore. Although he returned empty handed, but he is also happy. From the looks of things, he doesn't have to worry about having nothing to eat.

Happily returning back to the mansion, Jiang Hai, along with Robins drove that old pickup of his, headed towards Winthrop. If he wants to hire people, just posting some posters is not enough in this region. You must go find them in town. Winthrop is located on the east side of Boston. It's separated in the middle by Logan international airport. Because it is kind of far from central Boston, thus most people here operate family farms. As such the town isn't very big, since most people who work in Boston would rather live in areas closer to the city, such as Chelsea, Cambridge, Somerville and the likes. If the town was on west coast then it will be lucky to have a couple thousand people living there, but since the east coast is closer to Europe thus all towns in the east have a single point in common. They are all bigger than towns in the west.

While on the road, Robins explained the situation within Winthrop to Jiang Hai. This town houses a total of around 30,000 people. The town has everything you might need; supermarkets, dealerships, gun shops, boat yards and so on. Nearly everything Jiang Hai needs to buy can be bought here, saving him the long trip to Boston. Their first stop in Winthrop is a cowboy's watering hole; called Cowboy's Song.

"Alright boss, we're here, time to get off" Robins told Jiang Hai as he parked the car.

"Right" Answered Jiang Hai as he jumped down from the pick up.

At first glance, this dilapidated bar clearly has seen it's years. The bar has only one floor and the whole building appears to be made from wood. There is also a wooden sign above the main doors, but it has been burnt black. If it wasn't for the surrounding lights, then Jiang Hai will have no idea what is written on there. However it is especially because of these light that makes the bar appear even more shabby.

Notes

1. Go check wikipedia. It has all the info you will ever need. If you need peer

reviewed sources then check out their reference section, there is a bunch there.
[2.](#) Holy shit that's seriously bad, like a normal hour long trip take 2-3 hours there.
Now you're saying that it can be worse than that? I am seriously proud of your
achievements america, very proud. *double thumbs up*

[3.](#) A person from the construction company

[4.](#) Dat's what she said!! :p

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 18: Hiring

Chapter 18: Hiring

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Alright let’s go. Old man Tony’s a good guy, so he will definitely like you, boss.” Robins told Jiang Hai as he patted his arm with a smile.

“Lets hope so.” Jiang Hai answered with zero confidence but without any worries.

After all he isn’t the old him. On land, his body’s at human limits. This means a group of 10 or so normal people has no chance against him. He can also breathe under water, so as long as he hasn’t been poisoned then as long as he wants to leave; no one can catch him.

This is also why he trust Robins so much after signing the contract. Mainly because he’s got the skills to back himself. But luckily Robins never gave him an excuse for him to show off his amazing skills. Following Robins, the two of them walked into Cowboy’s Song.

As soon as they enter, Jiang Hai is bombarded with the smell of alcohol and cigarettes. Making Jiang Hai very uncomfortable. Especially when Jiang Hai doesn’t smoke, since he lives in Harbin. The winter there is just too damn cold. To make matters worse, the heating system in his house sucks so during university he had smoked for a couple of years. But it’s just too painful to smoke during winter so he used a year and quit. Thus, except for his close buddies, no one knows he used to smoke.

The thing with cigarettes is that if you’ve never smoked and you smell it out of nowhere then it is just uncomfortable. However, if you’ve smoked then quit, but smell it again, you will have a massive urge to smoke again. Fortunately, his extremely overpowered body quickly adapted to the smell, making it somewhat bearable.

“Yo. Robins, you haven’t been here in awhile. I heard the Green Forest was sold, are you here looking for a job?” Seeing Robins and Jiang Hai enter, a man

wearing an apron walked over. This man looks around 50 to 60 years old. A head full of white hairs, an apron full of oil stains, and wearing a bunch of outdated clothes. With a height of around 6", which is slightly shorter than Jiang Hai, but he has a belly that is big enough to fit him in whole.

"Hi old man Tony. I'm not here looking for jobs, but rather giving them away. This here is my current boss, the wealthy one who bought Green Forest." Robins replied back.

"Oh? This is the one who bought Green Forest? Very interesting. A young one, I thought the one who bought Green Forest is some 60 or 70 year old geezer. Haha, nice to meet you." Hearing Robins' introductions, Old man Tony broke the ice and shook hands with Jiang Hai.

"Hi, Jiang Hai here. You can call me Jiang."

"Boss take a seat first, I'll go take a look and see if any of the veterans are here." Seeing Jiang Hai and Old man Tony have met, Robins excused himself and went looking for more employees. As for Jiang Hai, he was offered a seat by Old man Tony. He ordered a long island iced tea and began to size up the bar.

This bar isn't big but also isn't small, around 1000 square meters, separated into 4 sections. In the left corner are 3 pool tables with many men and women creating a lively atmosphere around them. Next to these pool tables are a few dart boards with some people playing.

Apart from the entertainment section, is the main service area. Roughly 600 square meters in size. Arranged in rows of lots of small tables. Right now, there are a bunch of people fooling around. On one of the tables are pair of men arm wrestling. There is also a pile of dollar bills beside them. From the looks of things, they're gambling for fun.

There is also a counter with some bar stools. Currently they are all pretty much taken. Behind the counter is a huge liquor cabinet and a bartender showing off his skills. Beside him is a large screen T.V. broadcasting a game of football ([1](#)) with a group of cowboys watching it.

In America, there are 4 national sports. They are baseball, hockey, football and basketball. Although soccer is being broadcasted, but it still has a long way to go before it can be considered a national sport in America. Boston, being a sports

powerhouse, is home to 5 different teams. The team people ought to be most familiar with is the Boston Celtics. 17 times NBA champion, 21 times Eastern Division champion, 20 times Atlantic Division title, they fully deserve the title of strongest team in NBA. However in America, not a lot of people follow basketball. The amount of followers is slightly more than soccer, pretty much on par with hockey, but football and baseball is where all the viewers are at. Furthermore, Boston is also home to football and baseball leviathans. Baseball's Boston Red Sox; twelve American League champion, seven World Series crowns, and football's New England Patriots. Winner of 3 super bowls and 6 division titles. Even their hockey team, the Boston Bruins, is the winner of 6 Stanley cups and 16 division titles. As a result, Boston is fully deserving of being a sports city.

Currently being broadcasted is the weekly football match between New England Patriots and Buffalo Bills. Although Jiang Hai doesn't know much about football legends and stars and doesn't watch matches, but he has seen football before in anime. This anime is the legend – wait for it – dary Eyeshield 21 ([2](#)), hence his basic knowledge of football. As for attacking, defending, touchdown, kicks and the such, he understands some of its basics resulting in him watching with great interest. To be honest, football is like fighting. Those tackles can seriously make people's blood boil.

“So Jiang, you're interested in football?” Old man Tony came by with his drink right at this point in time.

“Only in the clashes, I can't even tell who's who. NBA is a lot more popular in China.” Jiang Hai received his drink and answered. Hearing this, Old man Tony let out a sigh.

“Originally I'm also a Celtics fan, but they let people down too much right? I can understand trading away Kevin Garnett and Ray Allen, but now Paul Pierce as well? My heart broke at that moment. He is the emblem of the team, how can I watch as he leads another team to beat us? I really don't understand what Ainge is thinking.” Upon hearing basketball, Old man Tony can't help but rant out his anger.

Hearing the rant, Jiang Hai can only smile and say nothing. The whole world knows which team most of China supports. That has always been the Houston Rockets. Although Jiang Hai has a different favorite team, but it is still in the

west. This team is the San Antonio Spurs. To the current roster, it is more about playing with the people than winning the games. You can try to beat them, but that is about all you're going to get out of the games.

"Hey, seems like you guys had a good discussion." At this moment Robins came back with a few people.

These people are all males. A 40ish year old with a not too long beard. Looks pretty cool, almost like those cowboys in hollywood. Another man who appears to be 40ish? But this one's black. To be honest Jiang Hai has a hard time guessing this guy's age because they mostly look the same from late teens to late fifties, especially when they shave their head.

Apart from these two, there is still four others in or approaching their 30s. One of them is full of self-confidence and wearing a full cowboy set, the two are very well paired together. Seeing this Jiang Hai can't help but feel too much of an exaggeration. At his side is someone with the same appearance but much more restrained. Behind these two clowns are two others. One of them seems to have some kind of mental disorder, while the last one just followed behind them all.

"Looks like you found a couple of them. Alright, time for me to get back to work. Hopefully you find those who you're looking for." Seeing these people, Old man Tony excused himself. Robins around here is pretty well known, so the people he suggested all have the abilities. But as for who gets hired, that requires Jiang Hai's approval.

"Yo bro, heard you were hiring?" Seeing Old man Tony leave and just before Robins started to introduce these people, the one that is full of himself cut in and asked.

"Shut it." Hearing this, Jiang Hai can't help but despise him even more. Especially when he appears to be too familiar with Jiang Hai and he takes him too lightly. Maybe it's because of seeing Jiang Hai's frown, the man next to him coldly yelled stopping this person from embarrassing them even further. But the looks on this one's face is one of complacency, as if Jiang Hai must hire him or something.

"Let me introduce them, This is Burke Dale ([3](#)), one of the best cowboys here. Been ranching for more than 20 years and has won 3 lamb lassoing competitions

in Texas. To be honest, if we're talking about pure riding skills than I'm not his match." Seeing Jiang Hai moving his gaze back to him, Robins started to officially introduce these people who he brought with him. The first to be introduced in the 40ish year old caucasian beside him.

Notes

1. American football people, not the usual football, that in merica is all soccer

2. I know most of you have seen this but here the link for all the others

https://myanimelist.net/anime/15/Eyeshield_21

3. 伯克 达勒

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 19: Hired

Chapter 19: Hired

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Hi, I’m Burke Dale.” The white man said in a very low voice. From the looks of things, he should have a very reserved personality.

“Hi there.” Responded Jiang Hai. His senses tell him that this man is a must have.

“This is Philemon Turner ([1](#)), another great cowboy here. His skills are without question, great personality, and used to be a fisherman. In the future he can also help out in the fishery if needed.” Robins continued on to introduce the black man beside him.

“Hi boss. I’m Philemon Turner, from Boston. I worked as a mariner for 5 years in California until that boss of ours took our money and ran off with his mistress. I was then hired as a cowboy in Texas for the last ten years. Don’t judge me by appearance. I can do anything and everything on the estate but pilot the trawler.” As soon as Robins finished speaking, Philemon continued like this was a rap competition. Sadly with Jiang Hai’s current English, he couldn’t keep up, but managed to understand the main points. He worked as a mariner in California for a bit before going to Texas to work as a cowboy.

“Alright, alright Mr. Turner. My English isn’t that fluent so can you please slow down a bit? There are also others who are waiting for their turn.” Jiang Hai said as he lifted his hand to stop him from blabbering on.

“This is...” Seeing Philemon blabbering on, Robins can understand his urgency. He really needs a new job and badly at that. As he was about to introduce the other 4, he was cut off again.

“Hi, I’m Freddy Wilson and this is my brother Augustine Wilson ([2](#)), and we’re both from Boston city. So bro, if you hire me, I can save you lots of troubles in the area.” This overconfident rebel stated. But as soon as he started to speak, both Jiang Hai and Robins’ looks instantly turned sour; especially Robins, he

looked as if he was about to explode.

“Freddy what are saying!” Seeing as how Freddy had finished speaking, Robins immediately wanted to interrogate him. Sadly he was stopped by Jiang Hai with a look full of interest.

“So let me get this straight. If I don’t hire you, then is someone going to come at me looking for trouble or am I going to have trouble?” Jiang Hai inquired. If anyone is familiar with him, then they know Jiang Hai is mad right now.

“Who knows. You’re on foreign land, and probably not hoping for any trouble.” Freddy continued on as if Jiang Hai had already taken the bait. Seeing Jiang Hai’s appearance, it reminded him of how he bullied that Chinese kid in college. That kid really had no balls.

Just from one look, you can tell that he is someone who is afraid of problems. All you need is a few provoking words then everything is settled. Job? That is so easy to find here. Thinking up to here, Freddy can’t help but smile at his own smartness. He thinks he’s already found out Jiang Hai’s personality. Chinese people are all cowards, especially in situations like these (3).

“Ohhh, I’m not like those chinese people whom you’ve met previously. I love to watch excitement, and especially love troubles. So you can leave now Mr. Wilson.” Jiang Hai said with disdain. A foreigner’s impression of Chinese people is cunning and refined, aka, easy to bully.

This is mainly because of two reasons. One, Chinese people from the start are taught to cause as little trouble as possible. Tone down all the problems you might have, make them go away. Hence with these teachings, kids grow up afraid to cause problems. Making them naturally have a cowardly character. The second reason is the unfair treatment by foreigners from a long time ago. Even now, some countries still treat chinese people like shit. Since they can’t do anything about it, they can only accept this treatment.

Sadly these two points can’t be used on Jiang Hai. Mainly because Jiang Hai is from Harbin. Everyone from there can be considered to be barbaric at times. If you have bad grades, then prepare for a beating. If you’ve been found to have been in fight outside and you hurt someone, then that is perfectly fine. You pay compensation, get fixed up and get rewarded for your behaviour. But if you lose

the fight, then not only is there a beating waiting when you return but also a big scolding. What about reasonings? Sorry that doesn't exist here. The one with the bigger fist will always be the winner.

And secondly, there basically isn't anymore discrimination left in America. Even if there is, then there are the laws. The laws are weapon of protection for the rich people. And Jiang Hai just happens to be a rich person, especially with his rank 3 centurion and his net worth of \$330 million. Let's not mention what major lawsuit he might file, but at least he isn't afraid of some local hooligans, degenerate police and the such.

"You!" Hearing Jiang Hai's solid answer, it clearly put all of Freddy's previous thoughts to waste.

"You can fk off now. Thank you very much." Facing the shocked Freddy, Jiang Hai continued paying no attention to him. Seeing this, Freddie suddenly had the urge to beat Jiang Hai to pulp. Sadly there is Robin's there watching his every move. So all he can do to not leave a bad impression on Robins and leave behind a couple lines, like you'll pay for this and I'll be back, before walking out the bar. His brother quickly looked at Jiang Hai with an apologetic look before chasing after him.

"Boss, sorry about this. Originally I didn't want to call Freddy but rather his skilled brother, Augustine. But his brother said he'll only come if I bring Freddy along so I can only bring both of them." Robins explained. Originally the wilson family owned a family farm. When their eldest child, Augustine, graduated from high school, he didn't go to university but rather helped out on the farm and became a cowboy. During the mortgage crisis, their family farm went broke so everyone had to find jobs elsewhere. He found a job in Texas and after 5 years became somewhat well known. Thus came back looking for more work. However unlike him, his brother fooled around for a few years after university and almost became a local thug. His parents hoped he could help his brother out, hence the previous scene.

"No problem, I could care less about these kind of thugs." Jiang Hai paid this matter no mind. Although this is Robin's fault, but he can't really blame him for it.

“Boss, this is Harmen Fels ([4](#)). A highly skilled cowboy, but he has attention deficit schaub disorder (ADSD). If you hire him, you’ll also get a tax cut.” Robins continued on with his introductions quiteily.

“Tax cut?” When Jiang Hai first saw him, he know this guy had some mental disorder, but as long as he isn’t crazy then it’s fine. When he heard the words tax cut, he can’t help but be dumbstruck. Where does the tax fit in? He hasn’t even made any money yet!

“Wait, you don’t know?” Seeing this Robins can’t help but look at him strangely, but he doesn’t have the time to explain it right now, so he continued on with the introductions.

“The last one there is called Bell Lester. Don’t mind how young he is, but he’s got the power. Left from the army last year and found a job at Lewis’s farm. Sadly Lewis lost all his money in Vegas and can’t pay any of his workers so he left.” Robins stated.

“Wait you said he was decommissioned? Bro, which unit you from?” Hearing this, Jiang Hai can’t help but feel interested in this Bell Lester.

“Delta Force, first squadron, third team. Boss.” Bell responded. Hearing this Jiang Hai can’t help but breath in a breath of cold air.

“Delta? Alright then let me ask why were you decommissioned at this age?” Jiang Hai can’t help but ask this strange question. Delta force can be considered elite of the elites, so even if you leave the corp then how can you end up ranching cattles?

“Last year during a hostage situation, we went in, but instead of hostages we found a trap. This trap caused us to suffer losses but no deaths. We also captured many people. My team leader told us to kill them all, I disagreed, and hurt a fellow team member in the process. Later I was kicked out of the force” Bell explained nonchalantly.

Notes

- [1.](#) 菲利蒙 特纳
- [2.](#) 法拉第 威尔森 and 奥古斯丁 威尔森
- [3.](#) yup racist number one confirmed.

4. 哈里曼 费尔斯

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 20: Taxes

Chapter 20: Taxes ([1](#))

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Alright gentlemen, congratulations. You have just won yourself a job.” After getting to know everyone, Jiang Hai gave the confirmation to hire these people.

After hearing Jiang Hai’s words, everyone was excited. They never thought it would be this easy to find a new job. The only thing left now, is their wages.

Since Jiang Hai gave Robins a weekly wage of 800, then their wages won’t be much lower. Burke and Philemon received a monthly wage of 750, while Harman and Bell receive 700 a month. This is only their base wages, if there is any special situation, then of course there are bonuses. Having confirmed everyone’s wages, everybody relaxed for the first time.

Unfortunately, brewers and fishermen can’t be found here. According to Philemon, they have to go to a different place to find the fishermen they need. Winthrop is a coastal town so they can only find cowboys at cowboy’s song, but mariners are much easier to find. After finishing all negotiations, the two drove Robins’ old pick up and returned to the estate.

“Well. at least the farm is pretty much set up now.” Muttered Jiang Hai within the car. Hearing this, Robins can’t help but laugh at his naïve thought.

“Hey boss, your thinking is too simple. Now that we have the people, we need to go pick out the cows we are going to raise. Oh, right boss. How many heads of cattle are we going to raise? We also need to buy some shepard hounds. Then there is the specialised truck to transport the cows. We can’t always rent those, since the amount we need and the frequency of use is just too high. Lawn mowers and some machines for cleaning out the cow shed are also needed. Wow, I haven’t ranched for a while now, but thinking about it again, it is still a troublesome business.” This are just the problems associated with ranching, there is also the fishery. However from Jiang Hai’s point of view, farming fish is much easier.

Because of his blood, as long as he dilutes it and spreads it into the water, then the fish definitely won't run off. There is also the possibility of attracting larger fish. But obviously, there is no way Jiang Hai can tell this to Robins.

As for how to raise these cows, he thought about it. Straight up feed them his blood? That won't work. But if he dilutes it and spreads it on the grass, then when the cows eat, even if it loses some of its power, most of its effects will still remain (2). Sadly, this means that he has to bleed again, but at least it will only take a day to recover, which is not too distressful.

"Dogs? What type of dogs?" Jiang Hai asks back.

"Well, there are a lot of areas to pay attention to." Robins said.

Cattle dog are very similar to shepard hounds, but they need to be much smarter. This is because although cows have a temperate nature but they have strong power, with some likelihood to retaliate. Currently there are 4 breeds to chose from. Australian cattle dog, Belgian cattle dog, Swiss mountain dog and German herding dogs. Generally German herding dogs refer to German shepherds. Choosing cattle dogs is mainly based around how smart and powerful they are.

Some people say, no breed is as smart as the scotch collies but they are just too weak. In comparison breeds like the caucasian and doberman pinscher have the power, but they're just too stupid. However these problems don't concern Jiang Hai since he has the power to change a dog's wisdom, it's just that no one knows about it.

Apart from dogs, they still need to buy trolleys. These trolleys are not the hand pushing kind, rather, they are the ones that get connected to a pickup. As such, they also need a big pickup truck. The greater the horsepower, the better.

There is also the need for cleaning machines. Think about it, how many feces are 20,000 heads of cattle going to excrete? If it's only a couple of hundred cows then it's still possible with man power, but 20,000 heads? They can't even finish after a couple days. Hence the need for an automated system. Cleaning out the shed when the cows are out grazing and before they come back at night is not a simple task.

Thinking about all the things that he still need to do, Jiang Hai can't help but

have headaches. He is a very lazy person and hate troubles. But from the looks of things, he dug himself a hole and jumped into it. Money is earned to be spent and he isn't going to sell this place, so he accepts the fact that there are some things that he need to do no matter what. After comforting himself, Jiang Hai quickly remembered something Robins said previously.

“Oh right Robins. You said earlier that I needed to report my taxes, report what taxes? I haven't even earned anything yet.” Jiang Hai asked. Hearing this, Robins looked at Jiang Hai blankly before explaining.

In China no matter which forum or website, there are always a few that sell the good points of western countries. They say the living standards are great, how great the air quality is, how good the food is, how great it is to stay there, how much more they earn and so on. They literally boasted them over the moon. Sadly there is only one which no one talks about because this point is seriously better in China than in western countries.

That is, the amount of taxes the government takes. In China, the amount of people who know that there is a tax collecting system is very little. The maximum amount of tax the government can take away from someone in China is only 20%. Compared to western powers this is nothing. Jiang Hai knew nothing of this. But now that he has a green card, he knows some of the taxes.

For example, the federal tax and state tax. The Massachusetts state tax is actually very little when compared to the other states. Even if Jiang Hai's ranch made the highest profit margin, he needs to give the state only 5%. But the amount of federal taxes he has to pay is insurmountable.

Normally his super high tax rate is at around 39.6%. Counting in all the subsidies, that is still around 35%. Basically he has to pay 40% of his profits as taxes to America. At the same time he has to pay social security 6.2% annually (retirement fund). There is also the 1.45% medicare insurance fee. Of course there are several different ranks for this, but no matter what, almost half of what he earns goes to the government. Now the question is, he hasn't earned any money so what taxes does he have to pay? Unfortunately, he is just to naive.

In America, everything costs money, including the air you breath. The piece of land Jiang Hai bought has an annual land tax. This tax does not care whether you

earned anything or not. Especially since Jiang Hai owns a large piece of real estate thus the amount of land tax he has to pay is also at the top rank, 3.6% land tax. He also need to pay an average of 1.2% usage tax for the grassland and the fishery annually.

Since this piece of property is worth 280 million, then under normal conditions the land usage tax would be 3.36 million. This also does not take into account medicare insurance, education fees for his future kid(s) which is bound to be expensive as heck. Although the schools here are separated into public and private, but you really can't get a good education out of the public ones (3). Instead private academies will provide great education, but their prices are just too damn high (4).

"Oh my god, my head!" Hearing Robins' explanation, Jiang Hai can't help but massage his solar plexus. He felt as if his head is about to explode. Why is there so much work?! There was never any mention of all these problems in America in all of those novels! Right now he seriously feels like he got lied to, he was too naive to believe them.

"If i knew this earlier then I definitely would've bought a piece of forest and lived there instead." Jiang Hai muttered in chinese so Robins couldn't understand what he just said.

It is truly difficult to live in America. According to the stats released in 2011 by the US government, a middle class family earns an average of 50,000 a year. Because the family has a house, 2 adults, 2 kids, a dog and 2 cars, when you subtract all the taxes from that 50,000 then they can only live under the help of subsidies. Don't mention America, even in China, a yearly income of 50,000 yuan is enough for a single person. But if it's a family then, hehe, if the kid needs to go to school? hehehe.... need to support the grandparents as well?

When Jiang Hai got back he didn't go to sleep directly, but rather took a shower before sitting down to calculate his balance on his laptop. He specifically brought this laptop over from China because of the chinese operating system. He also knows the computers here are cheaper and better than the ones from China, but if you can't understand what your looking at then what is the point?

Robins doesn't know how much money Jiang Hai currently has, only Jiang Hai

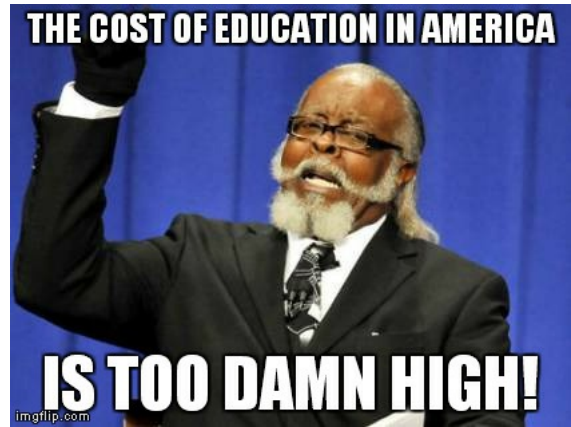
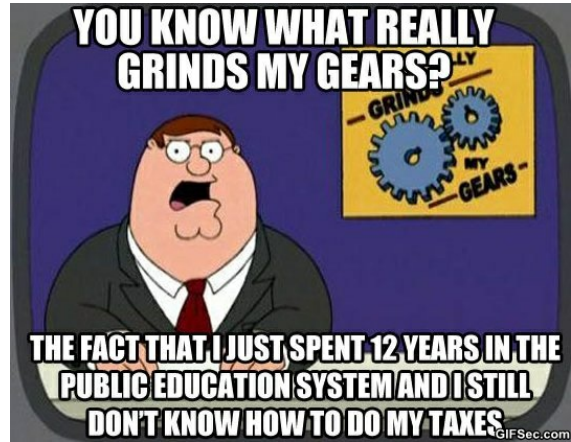
himself knows.

All those rocks added together sold for 332 million USD. The estate costed him 280 million. Out of the remaining 52 million USD you have to take away the renovation costs, all the other stuff he bought, plane tickets and stuff; which sums up to roughly 2 million USD.

Notes



2. Why couldn't he just put it into the water they drink -.-
Tl: cuz the grass will remain after eating, so it's like a one time thing with water



(Ad support) [TOC](#) (Ad support)

Chapter 21: Forced Approach

Chapter 21: Forced Approach

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

On his screen is displayed his bank balance of a little over 50 million. Now to make the calculations simpler let's use a whole number, 50 million.

According to what he said before, he intends to buy 20,000 heads of cows. A single head of cattle is roughly \$1000. This piece of information is from Robins and it is not talking about milk cows but rather the most popular cattle in America, the Angus cattle.

\$1000 a head, 20,000 heads means \$20 million. Adding on a set of cars, feed, and machines that is another yearly expense of 10 million. A total of 30 million is needed to raise these cows. Comparing with this upkeep cost, the salary given to Robins and people is really just some freebies of a little under \$20,000 a year.

Having to spend two thirds of his balance really made Jiang Hai panic, since he still has to pay his taxes. This is roughly another 10 million gone. In America, there is only one group of people that no one ever wants to upset, and that is the IRS (Internal Revenue Service).

If you're short of even a single cent, they will arrest you, then auction off all your assets. This appears to be fair, since they'll subtract however much you are missing from the auctioned off total then return the rest to you. But here is the question, who says they'll give you a fair market price on your assets? Do not tell Jiang Hai that everything in America is fair. He will never believe this, because no one in the political system is ever clean. As such Jiang Hai is completely afraid to owe the IRS money, thus he only has a total of \$10 million left in liquid assets.

zezezeze Seeing the rough estimate of how much he's got left, Jiang Hai is really hurting inside.

From the original \$330 million, there is only \$10 million left. Money is really easy to spend, but hard to earn. To be honest, the main reason he is in this dilemma is on Jiang Hai. At that time, he could've chosen anywhere, but he just

had to pick here. Now he is paying the consequences. There is really no way out of this situation, so he can only move on. The original plan also needs to change.

The cows definitely need to be raised since he has already hired the needed people. However, the plans for the winery and fishery need to be pushed back. Especially the fishery. Successfully farming fish requires a lot of upkeep. Without spending a couple hundred thousand for proper boats, then don't even think about it. If the fish in the fishery are like cods and herrings then additional octopus, squid and the like are also required be added to their feed. This all costs money.

Thus, as you can see, farming fish cost much more than ranching cows. Towards this, Jiang Hai is pretty helpless. He can only wait until he's got a bit funds before thinking about it again.

'Well, looks like I can only push back the plan to raise fishes till next year.' Thought Jiang Hai as he went to sleep.

The next morning, you can tell Jiang Hai's psychological state just from one look. Although he is living the life of a millionaire but he still need to retain an attitude of a broke person. Unless he can somehow earn some money quickly, then he will have to be like this for a while. He thought for a very long time, but still can't think of any good idea to quickly raise funds.

That cavern has already been scraped clean by him. The remaining glass there is all worthless. By his current abilities of human limits and being able to breathe under water, there is one possible solution. To search for shipwrecks. The cargo of any sunken cargo ship is worth at least couple million dollars. Yet another problem arises from this idea. He does not dare to venture that far out into sea. Even with his body at human limits, it is still worthless in front of those sharks, whales, giant squid and the likes. There is no way they will be afraid of him in the seas.

Especially if his blood somehow leaks into the water, then he really can be considered to be dead meat while out at sea. By the end, there probably will be nothing left of him. This is also the reason why Jiang Hai is afraid to go under water. What can you do? He is just that cowardly. If under no danger to his life, then he will be very fierce. But if you let him go look for shipwrecks, then doesn't

dare to.

This being the case, he can only think of ways to cut his spendings. There is not much to say about this. However there is no absolutes in this world. Even if he can't farm fish right now, he can still harvest from the existing stocks in the fishery. After all, when he went to examine the situation of his fishery, it can be described to be very abundant.

Even if he does not cultivate fish, the current stocks are worth at least a couple of million. If these fishes are nourished by his blood then they definitely will be worth more. At least, having a fishing trawler harvesting is of no problem. Thinking through all of this, Jiang Hai is still a bit panicky but at least he is prepared to put a stop on all his bold improvement plans. Let's observe how the situation unfolds. Since no matter what, this piece of property belongs to him, so no matter what, it has to continue operations.

Seeing the looks on Jiang Hai's face, Robins did not say much. He just drove him to the lawyer in Winthrop. There awaited the newly hired cowboys. Cheering himself on, Jiang Hai signed a yearly contract with each of them. When the contracts have been signed, everyone let out a breath of relief.

Currently in America, the whole cultivation industry is moving west non stop. Texas, Montana and the likes are all great ranching areas. Sadly because there isn't living area on the east coast, many farms went broke and turned into residential areas.

Generally speaking, family farms do not need extra hands to help out. Hence it explains the large amount of people who end up relying on welfare. Although the Americans aren't like Chinese people with their tradition of returning back to the land, but they still have feelings for where they grew up. Unless necessary, they generally won't cross states just for a new job. Towards being able to be hired by Jiang Hai, they are pretty happy.

"So boss, when do we start?" Philemon asked as soon as they left the lawyers. Unlike the others, he is quite anxious to get started since his family still depends on the money he earns.

"As soon as possible. You guys can move tonight if you want. We have individual houses for each and every one of you. You just need to bring some

daily necessities. If you have a family, they can also move in saving you some rent.” Jiang Hai replied.

“That is perfect, boss!” Hearing this, Philemon can’t help but be grateful.

In America, the majority of people have no habit of saving their money. They are very much like the Europeans. Spending all that you earn, sometimes even more. Under these conditions, the only way can own a house is to borrow. Sadly the bank won’t lend much to these kind of people. The mortgage crisis only passed for a few years ago, hence, if you do not have good credit ratings, then no matter who you are or what company you’re representing you won’t be able to get a single cent from the bank. As such, it is next to impossible to buy a house for ordinary citizens.

Luckily, the rent in America is dirt cheap. All property owners in America are taxed, on average 2%, annually on all their property values. Generally a house if a house is worth \$500,000, then that’s an annual expense of \$10,000. This does not include all the other expenses the property might incur. Such as management fees, broadband fees, cable fees, security fees, and so on. Thus, most of them will rent out any available vacancies to curb these losses.

In America, police are not made up of volunteers, but hired. Why do rich areas have more police? There are two reasons. One, because rich people live here so of course there is the need for more security. And two, because they pay more taxes. The budget of a police department all comes from taxpayers pockets. On a side note, patrols done by police counts towards overtime. Thus of course they want to protect their income source. While at it, they also earn more, as a result the richer the place, the more the police.

You can tell from just one look that Philemon and the other people are all like this. In this group, only Burke has his own house. Everyone else rents. Now hearing Jiang Hai is saving them money, how can they not be happy?

“Then go get moving, Robins and I will pick up some stuff and then we can have a little welcome party tonight.” Seeing everyone’s high spirits, Jiang Hai commented. This comment caused everyone to quickly get into their cars and leave.

Although you have to pay annual taxes for cars in most western countries, but

it is too low to deter people from owning them. Especially in America. Add on the fact that it is almost mandatory to have a driver's license by the end of high school, thus almost everyone is willing to own a car.

Seeing everyone leave in their own cars, Jiang Hai can't help but want to buy his own car. He also has a driver's license, but sadly, it is not internationally recognised. Hence he can only stare at others with their cars and do nothing about it.

"After ranking up then I'll get a licence. Right, I'm still broke." To change his license to be internationally recognised isn't that hard. He can just use the power of his centurion card and book a date for testing. Sadly that has to wait until next month.

Thinking up to this point, Jiang Hai can't help but feel a bit depressed. He then prepared to go to a supermarket in town with Robins to fill up that empty fridge of his.

"Hey boss! You said you needed some fishermen last night, do you still need them?" Just as Jiang Hai and Robins were about to leave, Philemon asked.

Hearing this, Jiang Hai stopped for a second to think. Originally in his plan, the fishery needs to be in operation. But since he is currently short in cash, thus he plans to slowly develop the fishery. He only needs a fishing trawler to clear some stocks in his fishery. This way he does not require too many hands, but a few are still needed.

Kai: o.o no in-text notes in this chappie.

TL: think that's a good thing

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 22: Mr.Anderson

Chapter 22: Mr. Anderson

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Hey Edward, you there?” Philemon yelled at the coastal cabin with 2 pickups currently parked in front of it.

“Just as I thought. Boss, you are extremely lucky, because only Philemon can convince this dude to come work for you.” Seeing Philemon yelling at the cabin, Robins can’t help but laugh. Sadly Jiang Hai still has no clue about what is going on.

“He is called Edward Anderson ([1](#)). A very famous fisherman here. Rumors has that his dad, a viking descendant, immigrated here from Iceland. When he was young, he went out to sea with a small boat and came back with a mature killer whale in tow. Afterwards he was hired by the government to train special ops members in diving. Sadly, due to his bad temper, he got kicked out after hitting an instructor or something. He is one of the best fishermen here. He previously earned more than enough money for his retirement, but Philemon married his little sister, otherwise there is no way we can convince him to go back onto a fishing trawler.” Robins explained to Jiang Hai.

Hearing what Robins has to say, Jiang Hai is shocked. Single handedly hunted a mature killer whale? If this isn’t a joke then he really can’t be described as normal. Thinking up to this far, Jiang Hai is suddenly interested in meeting him.

“Coming! Philemon, if it wasn’t for Vicki ([2](#)) then I would’ve already told you to shut up. Fk.” In response to Philemon’s yelling, a man with a large frame walked out of the cabin. From the looks of it this man is around 7” tall, roughly 50 years old with a thick beard. However, he does not look anywhere near 50 with all those bulky muscles covering his whole body. If it wasn’t for that big round pot belly then his appearance would be pretty scary.

“You bastard, I’m here to give you work!” Philemon did not take Edward seriously at all. However Edward is shocked to hear this.

In fact, it really is like how Robins described. He earned a lot of money when he was young. Since he doesn't have a wife or a kid, this amount of money is more than enough to last for the rest of his life if he saves a bit. But family members all know about their family member's' situation.

This guy is currently living alone, without any bad habits. He doesn't drink a lot, smokes very little, and never gambles. This kind of living can be supported with his current balance, but the problem is that he used to be married. Now he is divorced, but he still had a son. Although his son doesn't have great marks but Edward still had to pay \$50,000 for his college tuitions this year. With this bill, Edward's bank balance really hit rock bottom. Adding on the tuitions for the next couple of years, he is really strapped for cash. He has the intention to look for a job, and with his experience, it is really easy to get hired if he goes to the west or south coast. But with his age, he really doesn't want to move.

Currently, he is hesitant as this job offer from Philemon is really unexpected. This is mainly because there are no real large fisheries near Boston. The majority of fishing done here is when people drive their family owned trawler out to fish, or farm Maine lobsters. As such the fisheries here who are hiring outside workers can be said to be little, and the ones who are willing to hire him are next to none.

"Let me introduce to you my new boss starting today. He is the current owner of Green Forest, Jiang Hai." Seeing Robins and Jiang Hai walking over, Philemon stopped beating around the bush and got straight to the point.

"Hello. Green Forest? That's a big piece of property. So are you planning on exploiting the coastal resources there?" Edward asked Jiang Hai.

"Of course, but plans for cultivating fishes need to be pushed back for a bit. Currently I've invested too much into the ranch, so I can only offer you a job to captain a couple of boats." Jiang Hai replied. Seeing Jiang Hai speaking the truth, Edward can't be happier.

"Hey Edward, long time no see." Robins greeted, but Edward replied back with only a smile since his main attention is still on Jiang Hai.

"I want to know, when do you plan on further development of the fishery there?" He asked seriously.

"The earliest would be whenever the ranch's side brings in profits." Jiang Hai

said after a bit of thinking. He really does want to open his fishery, but he still has a funds problem. What could he do?

“That is definitely not a problem.” Edward replied happily.

“May I ask why this is not a problem?” Jiang Hai asked with doubt.

“Two reasons. One, I really need a job, so even if you told me to go catch asian carp I’ll still do it. Two, I have faith in the people you have hired. If both Robins and Philemon are working for you then I can guess, Burke is as well. With these three there, as long as there is no major incident, then in less than 2 years your ranch will be making profits. This coming from my understanding of them as well as the confidence I have in them.” Edward explained. They are all from the same town, whose skills are good and who’s are bad, everyone knows.

Looks like Robins really has some skills. Pretty famous around here as well.

“If it is like this, then I welcome you to join us. It is still quite early right now, so let us get the contracts sorted out. I also prepared a private house for you to move into.” Jiang Hai said.

Hearing what Jiang Hai said, Edward can only agree with him. He still needs to do some packing. Since this cabin is his so there is nothing to return. Because there are houses at the estate, he can rent out this cabin for another source of income. Currently, earning more money is a major concern. They proceeded to the lawyer’s office and signed another set of workers contract. Edward’s wage is also the highest amount from everyone who was hired.

Originally, under normal conditions, mariners earn more than cowboys. In America, mariners earn an average of \$48,000 a year, almost reaching the middle class. If people like Edward, who can pilot and boat, were to head to south California, then they can make at least \$100,000 a year. Sadly, this is Boston, thus Jiang Hai did not offer him that much. The final price they settled on is \$1200 a week, if they go out to sea then that is calculated separately. Like this, he can at the very least earn \$64,200, which, in many people’s views, is pretty good.

After calling out Edward, Philemon left to pack up. Compared with everyone else, they need to bring their families as well as their belongings so this of course required time. After signing the contract with Edward, Jiang Hai’s group of three

dudes went to the local supermarket.

This is also the first time that Jiang Hai is shopping in town, thus he is interested in the prices here. The prices in Boston can be said to be one of the highest in America. They only ranked 9th within all metropolitan regions in terms of income, but their expenditure is almost on par with existences like New York. Leaving people speechless.

Of course, these comparisons are all done against cities within the country, so of course it's expensive. However, when you compare the prices here with the ones in China, then it really is cheap; especially the meats. Americans don't like to eat pork, don't eat lake fish, duck, geese (will only eat their liver), dog, donkey, horse and so on. Their meat consumption is mainly beef, lamb, seawater fish, and chicken. And the prices for these are pretty much dirt cheap.

In the previous chapters we've already covered prices and gradings of beef ([Chapter 11](#)). A pound is only a few dollars. Exchange this into yuan and it is still cheaper than the ones in China by almost half. Furthermore, you don't have to worry about water injected meats or viruses in the meat ([3](#)). The price of lamb is almost the same. Sometimes, it might be a bit more expensive, but this is also the same in China. Finally, there is the literally dirt cheap chicken and sea fish prices. A bag of chicken bits is only 99 cents, a bag of wings is \$1.30, exchange this to yuan then it is cheaper by at least half. This are also the prices near Boston. If you keep moving west, with the exception of California, the prices will only drop.

However, if you think everything is cheaper like this then you're really in for a shock. This is because the prices of fruits and vegetables are expensive to the point of making people have sleepless nights. From Jiang Hai's examination, tomatoes are \$2 a pound, bell peppers are 99 cents each, 88 cents a pound for squash and this is just regular vegetables. If we're talking about organic ones then you at least have to multiply the normal price by 3.

Although everything here is mechanised, the prices are really expensive beyond reason. Apart from those city workers, everyone in countryside all farm their own vegetables. If they have excess then they can also sell them. In America, you really don't have to worry about them not selling. Because as long as you have stock and the quality is ok, people will buy them no matter the price.

This is also applies to medium and low grade vegetable such as the lettuce ([4](#)).

Notes

[1](#). Hello, Mr.Anderson. We meet again.

[2](#). 维奇

[3](#). thats a lie, these still exist, you just have to pick the right brands.

Kai: The author broke the 4th wall at the start of the paragraph o.o

TL: He does this sometimes when the topic he wants to cover is too long and metioned previously

[4](#). Kai: Is this why salad is so popular? Are they on a diet or is their wallet?

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 23: The First Gathering

Chapter 23: The first gathering

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

If you think that vegetables are the only expensive thing here, then you are still in for a ride. This is how Jiang Hai felt as soon as he walked into the fruit section of the supermarket. Apart from vegetables, the fruits here are expensive to the point of nightmares.

Watermelons, \$0.99 a pound. Kiwi \$1.30 each. Oranges, around 1.2kg each, \$4.99. Apples, \$1.99 a pound. When he saw these prices, Jiang Hai can't help but think about the cheap prices in China. Of course this is the price of only regular fruits. The better quality ones are of course more expensive.

At least this allowed Jiang Hai to see an opportunity to earn more. His ranch has a max capacity of 100,000 cows. Currently he is only raising 20,000 heads, so he has got free land left even if he rotates the cows every season. In these free spaces, he can plant some fruits and vegetables. He can guarantee that when these fruits and vegetables hit the market they will definitely sell. However everything right now is just talk. After a quick round of examination, they quickly started to grab the things they need.

Jiang Hai said he was paying for everything tonight, so of course they picked up all the good stuff. The beef they bought is of course the highest grade available here in the supermarket. The standard grade beef shoulder here is \$8 a pound and they picked up 200 pounds. All these beef is not just for tonight but also for regular uses. Moreover, estate owners like him definitely need to provide food for his workers.

200 pounds of beef, 10 packages of chicken wings and bits, Jiang Hai also want to buy some fish but was stopped by both Edward and Robins. Since his fishery is full of stock, Edward only needs half an hour with a fishing rod there and he will fish up more than enough for tonight. There is also a bunch of other stuff they need. For example onions. Average Americans can't stand the taste of scallions, ginger and garlic, but they like the taste of onions. Onions can also be used to

bring out more of the beef flavour so it is a useful item. Apart from these, there is also lettuce, carrots, celery, eggplant and so on. Of course these all have to be organic, although Jiang Hai is a bit short on money, but he isn't strapped to the point of not being able to afford these.

When the old generation of Chinese saved money, it usually came from the stuff they ate. However if Jiang Hai wants to save money then cutting food costs definitely won't be enough. Since it is like this then you might as well as spend a bunch to satisfy your needs. So apart from vegetables and meats, Jiang Hai also bought large amounts of fruits. Such as apples, oranges, and Canadian blueberries. These berries cost \$3 for roughly half a pound! Truly expensive. In the end everything totaled around \$2100. Obviously Jiang Hai does not care about this small amount of money. Usually these kind of large orders generally include shipping, so this is something they can make use of next time. For now, they transferred everything to the car.

Originally Edward and Robins tried to convince Jiang Hai to not help carry the shopping but just pay the tab, but they clearly didn't know Jiang Hai's real strength. In fact they were afraid that Jiang Hai will not have the power to move these things, thus being humiliated when the time came. To their surprise, Jiang Hai is able to carry almost the same as the both of them combined, clearly this amount of strength is not revealed by his build.

"That's all the food, let us go pick up some drinks!" After moving everything onto the pickup, Jiang Hai declared as he got into his seat.

"Drinks? Sure! Let's get them from Old man Tony, it is guaranteed to be good." No ordinary cowboy or mariner are lightweight drinkers. Upon hearing the word, drinks, they would start craving for some, thus Robins straight up stated without thinking.

"Let's hurry up and go, Old man Tony's drinks are indeed good." Edward agreed.

Soon after, two pickups appeared in front of Cowboy's song once more. Currently, the bar is not open, but there are a few waiters cleaning up. When the three entered, they were clearly caught off guard, but at least they are familiar with Edward and Robins. After understanding their intentions, they left to bring

the drinks.

In total they bought three kegs of self brewed beer, and 20 some bottles of hard liquor. These include gin, whiskey, rum, vodka, brandy, and tequila. Although they are pretty cheap, but they contain high levels of alcohol content. All this only cost Jiang Hai around \$300. He originally thought he needed to spend at least \$1000 since he drank in China and that cost him some 300 yuan a bottle, converted to USD, that is around \$50. But in the end, it only came to \$12 a bottle. Jiang Hai felt as if he got defrauded with nothing he can do. In China he clearly doesn't have the connections to get buy these type of drinks so in the end whose fault is that?

After packing up all the booze, Jiang Hai and his two subordinates returned home in a rush. The next step is to prepare all the food for tonight. Americans are different from Chinese people in terms of their attitude towards gatherings. In China, especially in the north, to show their enthusiasm, they will cook many dishes. During new year's, holidays or even when they have guests over, people from the northeast of China will always cook a large table of food. In addition the number of dishes will always be in even numbers. If there are a couple of guests then it will 6 dishes, a few guests; 8 dishes, If there is more than it'll be 10, 12, 16 and so on. It doesn't matter if you don't know them, but you still have to display your enthusiasm to meet them.

However this is completely different in America. Everything they make is very simple. On the whole, gatherings like this will never be short of meats. But because there are cowboys and fishermen here thus there will never be a shortage of beef and fishes. The beef is usually marinated and then roasted, while the fishes are generally pan fried. You can certainly also make a big bonfire and cook it there. Hence the only thing Jiang Hai, Edward and Robins have to do is just marinate the meats and skewer them.

Apart from these, there are also fruits and vegetables. Basically, there is only one recipe: salads. As long as it's not too salty and can be eaten, then it's good. As such, prep time takes very little time. In under an hour, they have already finished preparing everything and went to light the bonfire from the wood Robins had previously cut down during his usual patrols. After that rode their ATVs and drove towards the sea.

Currently, they have already finished preparing beef, chicken and salads. The entree will be pizza ordered from a local pizzeria. When he was in China, Jiang Hai already liked to eat these things, but they're just too expensive thus he never had the chance to try it before he had his 'divorce'. After the 'divorce', he's got the money but didn't really try it. When he came to America, he found that the pizza here is so much better than the ones in China; Especially the ones in New York, but the one from Boston are also not bad. This time he ordered 10 16" pizzas, more than enough for the group. Now they need to fish up some fishes for the gathering as well.

"Hey boss, have you fished before?" Edward, being a professional fisherman, has tons of different fishing rods. Fishing rods also come in many different types. There are the ones that are suited for lakes, reservoirs, and rivers, while there are ones better suited for out at sea. However they are also separated into many types. There are the ones used on a boat, on reefs, on the beach and so on. The length of the rod, the thickness, the material it is made out of and so on are all areas that require particular attention. The size of the fish hook, the thickness of the line, the type of bait used are also areas that require attention. This is not something easily understood.

"I used to fish near rivers and reservoirs." Jiang Hai stated. He has seen fishing rods used for sea fishing, but never used it.

"Oh, well fresh water fishing is completely different from salt water fishing." Hearing Jiang Hai's statement, Robins commented before Edward.

"Yes, when fishing in freshwater bodies, you're always using floats. But this is completely different out at sea. Due to the oceans being too deep apart from using floats, there is also bottom fishing, boat fishing, and sports fishing. We can't go boat fishing since we don't have boats right now, float fishing can only catch fish at around 1 meter depth, which isn't deep enough, thus we can only fish using sport tricks or do bottom fishing." Edward explained, but Jiang Hai right now clearly wants to show off his skills.

"Sports fishing requires many tricks, thus beginners on the beach usually all use bottom fishing. You can try it out." Edward said as he handed Jiang Hai a fishing rod.

This fishing rod is completely different from those rods with very thin top that are used in freshwater bodies. This particular rod's top is very thick, it also has a very thick line on the wheel. At the very top is a medium sized weight plus a couple of hooks, but there is no sign of any floats. Seeing this set of equipment, Jiang Hai is extremely excited. Having tried out the rod, Jiang Hai confirmed roughly how far he can throw out the hook.

Afterwards, Robins brought out some of his specially prepared baits. These baits are made up of tiny shrimps, but they really aren't small in size. These were caught from the ocean and specially prepared to use as baits when Robins was bored previously. But upon seeing these Jiang Hai can only feel distressed.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 24: Fishery development strategies

Chapter 24: Fishery development strategies

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

Noticing the type of bait Robins brought, Jiang Hai felt distressed. That's because Jiang Hai recognized these shrimps. These are alaskan pink shrimp, it can be said to have a very good taste.

These are also sold in China. If genuine wild shrimp are sold in China, then it would cost at least several dozens for 500 grams. Although the price of seafood in Harbin isn't as low as those coastal areas, but it can still be considered cheap compared to other inland areas. Ordinary live shrimp cost around 20 yuan for 500 grams. Any frozen shrimp that can be sold for several dozen a catty is not a common sight; especially when these shrimp have a large size.

However right now these shrimps are being used as bait, then Jiang Hai has really nothing left to say except curse them for being prodigal. Since Robins explained, there are tons of these shrimps here. Normally they live on sea beds 150 meters below the surface, but during those days with overcast skies, when it rains or when there is a hurricane, the bottom of the ocean lacks oxygen thus these shrimp will float up for oxygen rich water. During these times you can easily cast out a couple nets from the shore and catch several kilos of these. To most fishermen here, these shrimp and those clams on the seabed are all just fishing baits.

In America and European countries, clams, sea cucumbers, sea urchin and the likes generally have very few followers. Even if it is the best quality abalones, they won't even touch it if it is not super big. To them the words 'to waste natural resources recklessly' carries no value. Anyway, by following the so called local customs, Jiang Hai is indifferent to using these as bait since they are pretty easy to catch.

When all three have hooked on their baits, Robins was the first to cast out his line. Since they were boat fishing, Edward prepared 2.7m long rods with a wheel of a 100m line. With Robins' strength, his line was cast out about 50 meters. This

type of distance is not something an ordinary fishermen can cast. Following his cast, Robins tightened up the loose line and turned towards Edward and Jiang Hai with a smug smile. A person's fishing skills can be seen just by how far he can cast out his lines.

Seeing Robins' taunting expression, Edward soon followed and cast out his line. This time, the line was cast to a point almost 60 meters away; clearly further than where Robins cast his. Seeing this, Robins can't help but nodding, approving of this old man's skills. Finally it's Jiang Hai's turn. Although this is the first time he went sea fishing, he still has some knowledge of how to cast lines. With a powerful fling with his two hands, the weight flew out like a comet with the line on the wheel spinning continuously. After about 70 meters, the weight finally started to drop in trajectory.

Seeing this Robins and Edward are both flabbergasted. They know their boss has some monstrous strength, but they never would've thought it would be this terrifying. Feeling the two's astonished looks, Jiang Hai can only grin. Although this is his first time sea fishing, but this doesn't mean he has no clue how to cast out a fishing line. At least, when it comes to comparing strength, the current him will not lose to anyone.

"Boss your strength is amazing.... But you're stuck now." Edward praised, then added on another line.

"Stuck? What you mean?" Hearing this, Jiang Hai can't help but ask back.

"Just that your hook or weight got caught with the reefs below. If you don't believe me, see if you can retrieve back the line." Edward explained with a crooked smile.

Hearing Edward's explanation, Jiang Hai followed through. Sure enough, he can't retrieve back the anymore line when it tightened. After pulling with some strength, the line suddenly loosened. But when Jiang Hai retrieved back all the line, both the hook and the weight is gone.

"Ehhh.... This...." Seeing the empty line, Jiang Hai can't help but be embarrassed.

"No problem, this is a very common sight for new people. I've still got tons of hooks and weight. They are not expensive. \$10 and you can buy 100 sets."

Seeing the embarrassed expression on Jiang Hai's face, Edward happily stated. Getting stuck with corals and rocks, is especially common for beginners when it comes to bottom fishing.

Cough Jiang Hai quickly went to prepare his lines with a new set of hook and weights. This time he casted the line out with even more strength to almost 80 meters away. But not even a minute passed before he is stuck again.

...

"What the heck, how is this so hard??" After the second, third, fourth, fifth, ... , twelfth time of losing his hook and weights, Jiang Hai is ready to give up. He sensed that if he took a handful of weights and tossed them into the water, he'll probably crush more fish than the amount he has caught; which is 0.

"Fishing is not an easy to learn sport boss. When you cast out the line, you cast it out very far. So the weight will drag the spare line down with it. Hence when you try to retrieve the line, the hook and weight will float up and get stuck with the reefs below." Edward explained the science of line casting to Jiang Hai upon seeing his discouraged looks.

At the same time he cast out his lines and quickly retrieved his line. Not long after a half meter long cod was raised out of the waters. Normally these half meter long or above fish will fight for a long time before it is willing to be reeled in, but Edward is not your average person. Seeing this big of a fish, he has no wish to keep it underwater. Immediately up with his two arms, he carried the fish out of the water with force and threw it onto the ground behind him. Seeing those arms that are thicker than his head, it is not hard to imagine the amount of arm strength this old man possesses. On the other hand, when Robins set his eye on the cod, his eyes flashed.

"My god, This fish is definitely big enough for all of us tonight." Robins stated as he ran over and put the fish into a previously prepared cooler.

When sea fish leave water, they can rarely live for long. This is also the reason why you rarely see live sea fish inland. This is also the case with cod. Basically, in inland America, all the cod you see are frozen and have had their head and guts cleaned out. There is also a difference with the cod sold in China, mainly because the ones you can find in China are all smaller than this. Live cod of this size

generally only fetch \$30. It is not worth much but it never lacks markets to sell to.

“Alright let’s fish for fun now. The small one we fish can be used as bait, while letting go of the big one. I really want to see how many kinds of fish are here and how are the stocks.” Said Edward. His main purpose here is to figure out the conditions of the stocks here. Fishing for dinner came second.

“The fish stocks underwater are very abundant. From what I can tell, there are dozens of species plus a region of coral reefs. There are a bunch of both large and small fish. There are also a lot of crabs and lobsters.” Jiang Hai stated while tying on another set of hook and weight.

“Oh? The fish stocks here are this abundant?” Hearing this, Edward and Robins had very different expressions. Edwards has one of shock, while Robins can’t help but feel doubt since even he doesn’t know the conditions underwater.

“Yes, I had some divers survey the area before I came back.” Jiang Hai’s answer shocked Robins. He also cursed himself for being too talkative, since the amount of strange things that they will encounter will only rise as the ranch develops. He hopes that every time he says something, he won’t have to be scared of the consequences. Hence coming up with lies to cover up these strange behaviours is a must.

“If it’s like this, then that is just perfect.” Edward replied back. He is also itching to see if he can catch any bigger fish. As for Jiang Hai, he just finished tying and cast out his 14th set of hooks and weights

“Uncle Edward, since the fishery is this abundant, is it okay to only catch and not cultivate for now?” Seeing the enthusiastic Edward, Jiang Hai asked.

“I don’t know the specifics, but if it is like what you said then the fishery here is definitely worth something. With a single trawl and fishing near the coast, it’s perfectly fine.” Edward confirmed. If it is really like this, then this fishery can easily be worth more than a few million dollars. “Since this is our private fishery, then without cultivation, we can only decrease the amount of catching trips we make. Once a month is more than enough. Normally I need to do routine patrols, thus when it comes time to catching, I’m going to need you and Philemon’s help. So no need to hire more hands.”

Since there are no plans for cultivating fish, there is no need to buy and release fish and there is no need to release large amounts of fish food. As a result, this saves a lot of unneeded trouble.

Having had a chat with Edward, Jiang Hai roughly confirmed the things his fishery is going to need. A brand new coastal fishing trawler is a must. It will cost roughly \$600,000. At this price you can easily get a pretty big trawler, but the boat itself is not a waste of money. The endless money burner will come from the cost of the oil required to make the boat move. Apart from this, there is also the need for several work boats and the like for routine patrols. These stuff are much cheaper, the best in class for these only cost \$100,000 at most.

Buying boats, fishing nets, and reserve oil, came to just under a million dollars in total. This kind of spending, Jiang Hai can barely bear. Thinking up to here, Jiang Hai can confirm that he got lucky by being able hire a veteran mariner like Edward.

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 25: Bragging rights

Chapter 025: Bragging rights

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“It’s almost time. We should head back soon.” Edward commented as he looked at the skies and estimated that it was almost 4pm. Those guys probably are here, so they start to pack up and head back.

The result of nearly 4 hours of fishing can be said to be not bad. Of course the one with the most catches is Edward with a half meter long cod and 12 20cm long herrings. Apart from these, there are also a dozen or so centimeter croakers that were released. According to Edward, this type of valuable fish should be allowed to grow a bit more. There are also 3 sea bass, a 30cm long salmon, and 5 deep sea crabs ([1](#)). If these were sold in China then it would cost at least 150 yuan for a catty. There are also some small squid and octopus which were released as well.

Robins also had a fruitful catch, with 5 20-30cm long cod, 2 sea bass, and 4 herrings. Unlike Edward who is out to catch everything, he specifically targeted these fish. Since cods like to eat small squid so he specifically asked Edward to leave some for him when he catches them.

Lastly there is Jiang Hai with his abundant catch of 3 pieces of seaweed, if you count them as catches. In these 4 hours, he lost 21 fish hooks and 18 pieces of weights.

“No, let me try one last time. I don’t believe I can’t catch anything!” Jiang Hai is a very stubborn person. Thus having fooled around for 4 hours, with people giving him pointers on the side, he has finally left the newbie stage. In the last half hour, he only lost the hook once but kept the weight. Sadly he still has no catch to show.

“Haha, alright. Who says you’re the boss, go ahead, we’ll pack up first.” Edward laughed and gave the squid that he was about to release to Jiang Hai.

“Huh, I do not believe I won’t be able to catch anything.” Seeing the still alive

squid, he picked it up and started to hook it onto the fishing hook. But all animals have a mouth, thus, as he wasn't paying attention, the squid bit him and sucked out a drop of blood.

"Fk, so unlucky. (2)" Feeling the pain from his finger, Jiang Hai cursed. Although the wound healed at an astonishing speed, he still lost a 3 pieces of scales from his tattoo. Anyway, what can he do about it, it's not like his blood's power can be released to the public.

Thus Jiang Hai stubbornly hooked up this piece of squid and cast it out to sea. Maybe, because this time he is venting out his anger, he cast it out especially far. Of the 100 meter long line, 90 meters of it has been cast out. Then he quickly tightened the line to not let the weight sink to the sea bed and get caught on the reefs.

"ze ze, never mind that fact that our boss is new to fishing, but his strength is just out of this world. It is really hard to imagine him having this much strength with his build. Where does it all come from?" Seeing Jiang Hai display his amazing strength, Robins can't help but ask a rhetorical question. Packing up is pretty simple so Edward and Robins decide to clean up their catches while they are still here. If they had gutted the fish at home then not only would there be trash, but also a stinking odor.

Estates that are like Jiang Hai's all have a hard time with the trash it generates. They can't just dump it all onto the grassland or into the ocean. They have to wait for the garbage collection service which only comes every 3 days. Before then, all the trash can only be piled up outside. Due to this, if they pile the fish guts with the regular garbage then the fish stink will follow. In any case they have to wait for Jiang Hai so they might as well as clean the fish here.

This region here has no polluted water and the likes thus the water is very clear. Furthermore, these fish guts, bones and the like are not garbage when thrown into the ocean. Rather, they become food for the ecosystem below, so there is no need to worry about it.

"Haha, skills are slowly drilled out. Furthermore, he is the boss thus if he wants to then he can practice anywhere anytime." Edward replied back.

Robins knows that what Edward said isn't wrong. He also knows that his boss is

very open hearted, but has no knowledge about anything related to cowboys, ranching or fishing. He is just like any youth from the city, knows nothing but pretends to know everything. If they always pretend to know everything blindly, they are even more of a headache.

Thus instead of having him help out blindly, you might as well as let him goof off for the time being. After most of the work had been done, he has an infinite amount of time to learn how to operate the estate.

Seeing Robins smiling expression, Edward did not follow up and kept his mouth shut. They both know what each other is thinking. You obviously have to pamper the boss. Especially during this period of terrible economy.

“Ah! I got a bite!” Just as they were happily packing up, Jiang Hai’s voice suddenly popped out.

Hearing this, the two can’t help but be in doubt. When the two turned to look, they only saw the fishing rod parallel to the tightened line. It is as if it can snap at any time. The tip of the rod appears to have been already bent out of shape. Seeing this sight, the two are thunderstruck.

“Boss, you probably hooked onto a rock again.” Edward commented.

He doesn’t really care about this particular rod since the one he gave Jiang Hai is one for newbies. It has no special features but that of sturdiness. It also isn’t very expensive. In the event that it breaks, it will only cost him \$15 to replace.

But this is his fishing rod no matter it’s price. According to the bend on the rod, 95% probability that it is hooked onto a rock. If a fish is really in the hook, then it weighs at least a hundred pounds. How is this even possible?

“No, no, no. It’s not hooked onto a rock. That thing is still fighting.” Jiang Hai denied. Here this Edward and Robins both carefully examined the line. Sure enough the line is flopping left and right. This means a fish is on the line and it is really a big one.

“This, this can’t be possible.” Seeing this sight, Edward can’t help but want to test out the strength of the fish at the end of line. Currently even Jiang Hai has no confidence left because the strength of the fish is just too great.

Seeing Edward wanting to take over, Jiang Hai handed the rod over without

thought. But just as Edward got a hold of the rod, he felt a giant pulling force coming from it. If it wasn't for his over 200 pounds body acting as an anchor, he would've already been pulled into the ocean.

"Not good. This is too big, I can't handle it, here you go boss." Edward struggled to say as he handed the rod back to Jiang Hai.

"I. Do. Not. Believe!" Jiang Hai muttered as he begun to exert all his strength. One hand held the rod securely in place, while the other one turned the wheel non-stop.

If there are between fishermen near by then they definitely would curse at his stupidity. Since it is confirmed to be a big fish on the line, then he should be letting out line instead on retrieving the line and at the same time tire out the fish. Once the fish is tired it becomes that much easier to retrieve it. But if they say this right now then they would receive a massive beating from Edward.

There are only 100 meters of the line and Jiang Hai had already cast out 90 meters of it. With only 10 or so meters left in the wheel, what is there to let loose?

The best plan now is to protect the rod by simply cut the line and be over with it. But then again, this rod is too cheap to replace and Edward also wants to know what type of fish it is. Different kind of species keep on popping out in his mind. There are only a few species that live close to shore and have this much strength. There is the giant grouper, ocean sunfish (mola), humphead wrasse, tuna, swordfish, sailfish, and sharks. If it's a grouper then that's fine, humpheads are illegal to catch, molas taste disgusting, and the rest are all deep sea fish. So they rarely come this close to the coast, but he really has no clue what fish is on the line.

Truth to be told this newbie rod is simply too sturdy. The line is also strangely sturdy. Although retrieving the line is a very slow and tiresome task, but it is still being slowly reeled in. Now, even Robins has come over to see what the catch is.

90 meter distance isn't really that far. After roughly 5 minutes, Jiang Hai has already reeled in close to 40 meters of it. At this distance you can begin to tell what species it is.

Under the three's shocking eyes, a tall dorsal fin appeared. When it was reeled

in another 10 meters, you can clearly see it's distinctive features. Seeing its features the three are completely flabbergasted but also extremely excited at the same time, because that fin, that shape, and that size can clearly foretell that it is a shark.

Notes

- [1.](#) the scientific name for these crabs are Portunidae Benthochascon.
 - [2.](#) unlucky, truly unlucky -.-
- Kai: Maybe it would've been better if he got to decide whether a drop of his blood was 'special' or not.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 26: Not ordinary

Chapter 26: Not ordinary

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Quickly cut the line!” seeing the ferocious shark, Robins yelled out without thinking. But Jiang Hai ignored him completely and continued to retrieve the line.

Sharks are also fish, but they are cold blooded fish. Cold blooded animals have one advantage and that is they can change their body temperature. Thus it is very easy for them to survive. But this advantage is also a disadvantage because although they have a great burst of strength, it is just too short lived.

If it was an ordinary fishermen then they would let the fish tire itself out by releasing the line. When sharks are running away, they can use this time to recuperate. They will lose strength over time, but it won't be that quick. Sadly Jiang Hai is not like any ordinary fishermen. He can face these sharks head on in a strength contest.

Sharks tend to lose their strength extremely quickly, it's just like a normal tug of war. If the two sides have equal strength then it is very hard and very time consuming to determine a winner. But if one side uses all their strength at the very start and crush the opposition then they are pretty much invincible afterwards. As soon as the opposition relaxes a single bit, then the winner is determined in that instant, by pulling the opposition over during their moment of weakness. Currently the shark is like this. Being forcibly pulled over by Jiang Hai, the shark really doesn't have a lot of strength left.

40 meters is really not that far. After only a minute, Jiang Hai has already pulled it next to the pier. Immediately, you can see Jiang hai with his legs spread apart in a squatting position. With his full strength coming from his arms and a yell, a shark that is almost as long as 2 people combined got pulled onto the pier.

Seeing the struggling shark, Edward quickly ran up with a huge bag in hand and covered its head. Truth to be told, it is much easier to tame a shark in water than on land. Since in water all you have to do is flip them over and they are pretty much stuck, but how do you flip them over on land? They have a dorsal fin you

know.

Hence there is only the solution of covering up its head. If it can't see anything and can't smell anything then it will somewhat behave itself.

"What the flying fk. Never thought it would be this big!" However Jiang Hai's reaction to this is completely different than that of Edward or Robins. Because this is the first fish he ever caught and it is this big. It is simply too amazing.

"Boss, you really are something. You even caught this beast." Seeing the excited Jiang Hai, Robin can only comment bitterly. What the heck is going on!

"Of course, you really think I'm like everyone else?" Jiang Hai replied back in a bragging manner. But seriously, if you can catch this big of a shark then you really have the right to brag.

"This is a sand tiger shark with a body length of about 3.1 meters. So what are we going to do about it?" Seeing the shark stop struggling, Edward can finally relax and ask Jiang Hai for further instructions.

"What plan is there, but to eat it!" Jiang Hai replied back without even thinking.

The fish he catches are clearly to be eaten. There is no way he is going to release it. That is totally against his Chinese nature.

"Huh?" Hearing Jiang Hai's answer, Edward and Robins are both dumbstruck with a look full of hesitation. Seeing this, Jiang Hai can't help but feel strange, what are these looks for?

"What, you can't eat them? It's against the law or something?" Jiang Hai asked.

"That's not it. Although sharks are considered endangered animals internationally, but it is still within the law to hunt them in America. However, we have no idea how to eat this thing." Robins answered with a face full of embarrassment.

"Sharks really aren't that tasty. Since they have no bladder, when you gut them, all their waste is released into the meat making it very stinky and unappetizing. Adding on the fact that the meat itself is hard to digest and the

hard as all hell skin, there are only a few chinese restaurants in New York that will want it's fins. Apart from that no one touches anything else on its body." Edward muttered. Since he spend most of his youth out at sea, what is there in the sea that he hasn't tasted?

Hearing this, Jiang Hai is really stuck between a rock and a hard place. This particular problem really needs a solution, but he really isn't some saint. In his view, those people who promote eating shark fin are cruel and some are rich idiots with nothing better to do ([1](#)).

Those who say lives are valuable, promote ending of the consumption of sharks, wild animals, and even dogs. Then why don't you say stop consuming pork, beef and lamb? What lives matter, that is all subjective horse shit. These animals are all lives as well.

Some will argue back that these are all food, it does not matter if it is cruel or what not. In Jiang Hai's point of view those dogs, sharks, and wild animals can all be considered food. If you really promote equality between all beings then don't eat.

Since, even if you become a vegetarian, the vegetables can also be argued have lives. People who wish to eat what they want and die because of it, is completely their own fault.

Since you chose to live, then don't think about what you can or cannot have. The laws of nature have existed for eons, it doesn't matter if you are man or animal, you cannot deny the inevitable.

He hasn't tried shark fin his whole life, so saying he isn't interested is a complete understatement. Hence right now he can say with complete confidence that he wants to eat it. However another question arises, he has no clue how to make it.

Thinking up to here, he can't help but be perplexed. If he were to release it then he really don't want to, but he also has no idea how to cook the shark fins. This is really a hard question with no answers.

"Well we could keep it for now." Edward said, as if giving Jiang Hai a valuable life line to escape the hole he dug for himself.

These cowboys and fishermen are the same as Jiang Hai, they have no feelings towards those so called protectors of nature. Their hesitation to make a decision right now is because they have no idea how to eat this thing. If Jiang Hai says he knows how to prepare this, then they'll butcher it and be done with it. But since Jiang Hai has no clue how to prepare as well, how can they waste the effort they put into catching this beast.

"Keep it? Where though?" Here this, Jiang Hai is even more perplexed. The shark is 3.1 meters long, where is heck can they find that big of a place to keep it?

"Boss, if I remember correctly there should be a large swimming pool behind your mansion. It was built by the previous owner, but since the mansion is really close to the sea thus it was left abandoned. It also has a gate facing the sea so keeping it there definitely fine." Robins stated.

"Alright then let's keep it for now. We should hurry up and head back. Once I find a competent chef then we can get rid of it." Jiang Hai stated matter-of-factly.

Under the shocked looks of the two, Jiang Hai single handedly picked up the shark and secured it to the back of his ATV. After the three quickly returned back to the mansion. In the area between the forest and the mansion, is an abandoned swimming pool. This swimming pool covers 250 square meters, with a deep end of 3.5 meters and a shallow end of 1.8 meters. Even after all these years of lack of maintenance, the tiles that covered the pool still remained. You can clearly tell how much importance the previous owner put into this pool. But sadly, this became Jiang Hai's extremely large fish tank.

Currently the pool is full of loose leaves and bird poop. As soon as they reached the pool, Edward and Robins jumped in and began to clear away the leaves in the pool. They also opened up the water gate and used the incoming sea water to give the pool a good scrubbing. At least now the pool isn't completely covered in bird poop. After a basic cleaning, the three threw in shark into the tank. Since a shark has a very short lifespan once it leaves the water.

Fortunately, they were quick enough such that it only took 15 minutes before this sand tiger shark entered the water. He can't help but move around with

excitement to show off his vigour ([2](#)).

“Alright, this should do.” Robins closed the gate as the pool slowly filled to the brim. Seeing the shark settle into this new home, Jiang Hai somehow felt disappointed. Not being able to eat this shark this time truly is a waste. But sadly no one here knows how to cook shark properly. What can they do?

Just as his was pitying himself, Robins called. Glancing quickly at the time, it somehow is almost 5 and Burke and the others have already arrived.

Quickly, Jiang Hai went to the entrance to let these people in. From the very start, Jiang Hai clearly stated that they can move in with their family members. However, there is only two people in the group who has a family. Harman is obviously single. Bell just left the forces so obviously still single. Burke had a wife but like Edward’s, she had left him. Currently he is living here, while his wife and daughter are in New York. This year she is 26, after finding work and because of her new family, she pretty much lost all connections with him.

As such, out of the 4 people here, only Philemon is not alone. However he only brought his wife, since his two kids are both in living in New York. The eldest one is working as an assistant manager on a high school basketball team. Although his position is that of an assistant manager, but his workload generally consist of booking bus tickets and hotels for the team. The youngest one is currently attending university thus he only comes back during the holidays. As such for the majority of the time, there is only him and his wife here.

Seeing Jiang Hai come to let them in, the four happily exchanged greetings. Jiang Hai returned led them inside to the parking lot. On the other hand, Robins and Edward had pretty much finished the preparations for the feast.

Notes

[1](#). This is all some philosophy shenanigans, so plz don’t get made and what not at me!

[2](#). Pet #1 confirmed. It’s a freaking shark.

Kai: The chapter title is prob referring to Jiang Hai’s strength, or his new pet ^.^

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 27: A Feast

Chapter 27: A Feast

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Welcome, welcome everyone.” Robins smiled as he looked at the 6 cars in the parking lot.

“What is there to welcome? We all work and live here now.” Philemon retorted back.

A car in America is only a tool of transportation. It is also cheap enough for everyone to own. However, the quality of the car can sometimes be a concern. A second hand car only costs a couple of thousand sometimes even a couple of hundred dollars. For example, the ‘junk’ bumblebee from the first transformers movie cost the MC less than \$2000.

Right now, all of his workers have cars, the best belong to Edward and Robins. Of course, there is a difference between the good and the average. A good vehicle can cost hundreds of thousands, but they clearly don’t have the money for these. Thus, their pick-ups are all old Chevys from the 70s and 80s. According to Edward, back then, they only cost around \$30,000 and were really easy to afford, especially when you can get a loan from the bank. However, the top tier pick-ups in China, like the Ford F 150 Raptor, only cost thirty to forty thousand here.

Apart from these two pick-ups, everyone else owns personal vehicles. Philemon drives a Honda MPV which is a 7 seater. Easily able to fit in the whole family. Burke, due to being single, owns a Jeep Wrangler. Whereas Harman drives a 6/7 year old Subaru Forester. Finally there is Bell with his cute little Beetle. Although this car is generally intended for girls, it is also the most expensive one here.

Seeing all these cheap cars in front of him, Jiang Hai can’t help but feel deflated. However, they still have their own cars, unlike him who is still car-less. Since everyone is here, then it is time to go on a shopping spree for cars tomorrow. The trailers for the cows are also a must. Apart from these, there is

also the need for cattle dogs and new ATVs. It is a good thing he lives near the Boston metropolitan region. As long as he is willing to spend money, there is nothing he can't buy here.

"Alright, you guys go roast the fish. I'll take care of the meat so that we don't all have to eat burnt meat later." Suddenly, Mrs. Turner took over the grill and kicked out Edward and Robins. Vicki Turner is Edward's little sister, so of course she is familiar with Robins and the rest. She is also a full-time housewife, hence her food is also very well known locally, but please don't underestimate her stubbornness, since the consequences are not something anyone can handle.

"You don't understand, our boss is Chinese. He doesn't have the habit of eating rare cooked meats. So we need to completely cook them." Robins replied back, with a hard line attitude since he still has some confidence in his abilities.

"Got it. Go get the fire ready. This is not how you cook well done meat." Vicki replied with her eyes narrowed. Seeing this expression, Edward smartly left his prep work to her and went to prepare the bonfire.

"Sweet, we got lucky boys. Mrs. Turner is cooking. Hehe." Bell commented on the scene from faraway.

"What do you mean? Is her cooking that good?" Jiang Hai asked as he came over with 2 bottles of beer. Although he is the boss here, but he still mingles with his workers unlike most estate owners in America. However everyone is either 20-30 years older than him or is like Harman; who just sits there staring into nothingness. Only Bell is someone around the same age who he can hang out with.

"That's for sure. You won't understand now, but in a bit you'll know what true Boston cuisine tastes like." Bell stated matter-of-factly as he received the beer.

"Oh, then I really need to have a good taste later." Hearing this, Jiang Hai can't help but get excited.

While waiting for the fire to be lit and for the beef to be done, he had a chat with Bell about everything, but their main topic still revolved around his service stories. With no need to worry about leaking classified information, Bell let out everything; including those need-to-know topics ([1](#)). They talked about his training, the equipment they used and even his specializations.

Within the Delta Force, each team is armed individually. Each team has an assault expert, sniper, explosive expert, communications operative and so on. Although everyone here specialises in a particular field, but they all need to know some other skills, such as the ability to drive anything and everything. Take Bell here for example. He is a veteran sniper but things that fly the in sky, drive on the road, or moving in and on the water, as long as it is a machine and able to be piloted by a single person, then he can operate them (2).

This really turned out to be a very pleasant surprise for Jiang Hai. From now on there will always be someone who can operate all the machines on the farm. Not only that, but he can also accompany Edward during his patrols and keep him safe.

Just as they were getting into some serious topics, the fire is lit on the other side. Their catch today has already been prepped. It doesn't matter if they were filleted or kept whole, they all ended up on plates sitting next to the grill. This way, who ever wants to eat can cook it themselves. On the opposite side, the first batch of beef is ready. To satisfy his curiosity of Mrs. Turner's food, Jiang Hai ran up and took a piece. As soon as it entered his mouth, he was left speechless. It is just simply amazing.

This soft texture, but also completely cooked through. A bit of bark outside absorbing the taste of charcoal then you add on the special sauce Mrs. Turner specifically prepared; you get a completely different sensation. This is totally different from how Robins cooked his beef; with the all purpose black pepper. In less than 3 bites, Jiang Hai has already finished this 4oz piece of beef and is reaching out for more.

"So boss, how do you like my wife's cooking? She not only knows how to cook but also how to plant. On the way here I saw a small garden out back, but that is just too small. We should expand it a bit to be able to accommodate all of us." Philemon walked over upon seeing Jiang Hai in the act of shoving more beef into his mouth.

"Em, great idea. Mrs. Turner have you ever thought of find a job? Planting vegetables and what not we can talk later. Right now there is only me over here, so it is kind of troublesome to cook only for myself. If it is possible, can I come over to eat instead? Of course there will be appropriate fees involved." Jiang Hai

suggested as he ate.

Hearing Jiang Hai's word, Philemon's wife is exhilarated. In fact, the main reason she helped out today is for these words. After all their family has two kids, although there is no need to support the elder one anymore, but there is still the tuition fees for the youngest. Being able to bring in some extra income without doing anything labor intensive is obviously a wise decision.

"Of course that is fine. After all, all I have to do is simply add on a couple more servings." Hearing Jiang Hai's request, Philemon's wife quickly agreed.

The two negotiated and quickly settled on a price of \$50 a week. Since Jiang Hai is already providing the raw food, Mrs. Turner is only processing it and can't really ask for much. Adding this to Philemon's salary making it \$800 a week. A \$200 expense every month to have someone cook for you is also within Jiang Hai's acceptance range resulting in this frustrationless negotiation. There is also no need to put this down on paper since it is only \$50 a week. This is literally pennies in Jiang Hai's point of view.

The feast that followed is one of satisfaction. After the pizza arrived, everyone started to drink booze and eat food open heartedly. Those roasted fish, chicken wings and bits frankly taste delicious. It also has been a long time since Jiang Hai was able to enjoy himself this much with food. Of course the ingredients only played a minor role, while his frame of mind took over the rest.

As the night darkened, everyone continued to party till past 11pm before heading back. Although, Jiang Hai's body has many strengths, but he still has limitations; especially towards alcohol. Due to him being overly happy today, he drank himself drunk and went straight to bed after. Since the others are hired by him, they don't have the privilege to escape the task of cleaning up the place.

The next day, what Jiang Hai saw out his window is only a fire pit. Everything else has already been cleaned away. This sight confirmed his worker's attitude towards him to be great. Soon after came the daily personal clean up process of washing your face, brushing your teeth, and what not. When it was all done and over with, Jiang Hai ran over to Philemon's house for his breakfast. Generally American breakfast almost always consists of a combination of the following: toast, sausages, eggs, porridge and coffee.

What Mrs. Turner prepared today is toast, eggs and porridge. Although Jiang Hai has no appetite to eat the porridge after seeing it's appearance, but the toast is another matter altogether. Having finished this simple breakfast, Jiang Hai with Robins and his old pick-up headed towards Winthrop to finish preparations for the ranch. In these preparations, shopping for cars and dogs is definitely priority number one.

Notes

- [1.](#) Kai: There's definitely no contract binding him... >.>
- [2.](#) Kai: Bell. James Bell.

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 28: Cars

Chapter 28: Cars

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

The journey from Jiang Hai's estate to Boston is roughly the same direction as heading to Winthrop. Going to Boston takes them roughly an hour or so and Winthrop is on route roughly half an hour in.

Most Americans have a problem, which is somewhat different from the situation in China. In China, some urban folks look down upon those rural folks in the periphery. Even if these folks have more money than the urban folks. This is mainly caused by the difference in the district they live in. In America, people in urban areas also look down upon the rural folks, they are portrayed as country bumpkins who are rejected by society. But this feeling is mutual since the rural folks also despise urban people since their riches all come from the blood, sweat and tears of the rural people.

Because of this relation, most people who live near Winthrop will only buy things there instead of going to Boston. Of course there is another reason. Due to that extra half hour trip, almost everything in Winthrop is cheaper than its counterpart in Boston. This is also one of the few things people who live nearby Winthrop are proud of. Especially by being a member of the Boston metropolitan area, the stuff you can buy here is pretty complete.

With Robins, Jiang Hai arrived at one of the biggest car dealers in Winthrop. Car dealers are generally the same everywhere. They tend to be based on the outskirts of city and towns due to their sheer size. The one here in Winthrop is also the same.

This car dealer is called Fred's dealership, a private dealership either owned or created by a man named Fred. According to Robins, this dealership is well known in the local area for their friendly service and fair prices. If something breaks, needs changing or other kind of repairs, they offer a friendly price for their services. Almost all of the well known brands around the world are sold here. Those from America, Japan, Britain, German, Italian, and so on are all here. You

can say that they sell all but those super expensive, high end supercars.

“Hi there. How may I help you?” As the two entered the dealership, a youthful looking woman came over and asked.

“Hi. Can you go ask if Durufle is in? (1) If he is tell him Robins is here to see him.” Robins replied. No matter where you go, you will always tend to buy using people you’re familiar with. As long as you can save money or can get more freebies, who wouldn’t use their connections?

“Alright, wait a moment please.” The woman said disheartenedly.

She won’t earn sales commissions this time around, but good service manners meant that she still had to accept the rejection with a smile. Not long after, someone with the same build as Robins was called out. However, he is much fatter than Robins and has a look that is unique to the Mediterranean.

“So old chap, are you finally ready to say goodbye to that old broken pick-up? For a sec there, I thought you were gonna grow old with it.” This guy started to crack jokes as soon as he saw Robins.

“Of course I’m going to keep using him, but I’m here today to accompany my boss.” Replied Robins and also introduced Jiang Hai.

“Your boss? Ohhh, you mean Green Forest, then you really need some assistance to cover that large of an area. Alright sir, Fred’s dealer Durufle, at your service.” Durufle said as he led Jiang Hai further into the dealership.

Because Robins is also here, he didn’t bring them to see some random cars, rather, he went straight to the pick-up section. At first glance, all you can see are rows upon rows of steel monsters lying in wait.

“Here we are, pickups galore. Although I can’t say that we have the most complete collection of pickups in America, but I can at least can guarantee that if it is available in New York or Boston then we have it here. We also have some pickups from China; if you want to take a look.” Durufle proudly boasted.

“Hehe, forget about it.” Although Jiang Hai is feeling proud for his fellow country men for exporting their pickups to be sold in America, remembering their crappy properties, he lost all interest in them. He has obviously heard of the saying the stuff sold within China is completely different from those being

exported, but he still does not want to tempt fate. Since he is to buy, then he may as well get the best.

“Well that’s too bad.” Said Durufle without any signs of pity.

In America, there are mainly 4 brands that dominate the mid to high end pick-up market. First, the most used, Ford’s F series. These cars are cheap, domestic, easy to maintain, and hard to break. Price range from tens of thousands to hundreds of thousand, it is based on what model you fancy and additional options. Next is the Dodge series. Compared to Ford, it is somewhat cheaper and everything else is pretty much the same. The only down side is the lack of choices, since their main focus is on the MPV market.

Then there is Japan’s Toyota. When compared to Ford and Dodge, they have many advantages. One, cheap. Two, high mileage. Although the gas in America is pretty cheap, but due fees such as taxes, tolls and such, a litre of gas cost roughly \$1. There is almost no difference when you compare this to the prices in China, but they don’t have random fees like road maintenance tax, bridge tolls, and so on. There is the buying power of the American dollar which is more than 6 times stronger than the Chinese yuan. Basically, Toyota’s pickup sales have never been bad, but Jiang Hai will not support anything Japan ([2](#)).

Apart from the above 3, there is the high end truck maker GMC. GMC dominates the commercial truck market, but has expanded their sights on to the pickup market. According to Durufle, any of these 4 brands will do.

After thinking a bit, Jiang Hai decided to follow the masses by sticking with Ford. Although he wants to buy some weird cars, but since none of the ones here have good performance thus it can only wait. Now is to choose which model of the F series. In total there are 7, from smallest to biggest, 150, 250, 350, 450, 550, 650 and 750.

The most common is of course the F150, commonly referred to as the Raptor. In China, a Ford F150 cost roughly 500,000 yuan. If you take away the ~40% customs tax, then exchange the remaining into USD then you get a price of around \$60,000. Adding on license plate fees, insurance, and sales tax, it would come to a total of around \$80,000. Since Jiang Hai is buying these for agricultural purposes, then he get some subsidies from the government. After all

the subsidies are counted in then a 6.2L F150, which can do basically everything on the farm, will only cost \$58,000.

As soon as Jiang Hai hear this price he was moved, but was firmly rejected by Robins. Generally for a family farm a F150 is more than enough. However, the farm Jiang Hai owns is just too big. Without even mentioning the need to pull boats and fish later, just pulling cows around is next to impossible for the F150.

“You can buy one and use it for general purpose stuff. However if you want to work done, then you need to use other types.” Hearing Robins words, Jiang Hai felt disappointed. The car that he thinks is good, is actually this bad.

“Indeed, your farm is just too big. If you want to transport cows then this model of pickups can move at most 50 heads, anymore then it won’t be able to move. What you need are the super duty series. I don’t recommend you buying the 450s and beyond since they’re just too expensive, but it’s all up to you.” Durufle said as he agreed with Robins. After all, Jiang Hai can be said to be his neighbour from now on. If he was to rip him off now, then there is no telling what this young millionaire will do to him. Thus it is best to warn him first before he makes a decision.

In Durufle’s opinion, Ford’s 450 and 550 can only be considered to be medium grade within the series, but there is too much of a price difference between models. A F450 cost \$140,000 after all the government subsidies. If this is China, then it would easily pass the million yuan mark. A 550 cost a whopping \$210,000. It is really expensive, but this car’s horsepower puts the 150 to shame. According to Robins, if a 550 is used for transporting cows, then it can pull a trailer plus 300 heads at once.

This is already the standards for most large scale farms. In the west, the majority of farms all use either 450s or 550. However from the very beginning Jiang Hai didn’t pay them much attention. Rather, his attention had been completely absorbed by the biggest truck (3).

Notes

- [1.](#) Kai: He’s only a temp char, don’t pay too much attn to the name
- [2.](#) Kai: Ever since the Sino-Japanese Wars, they pretty much hated each other
- [3.](#) Kai: Bigger is better? :3

Chapter 29: Animal shelter

Chapter 29: Animal shelter

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Oh my god boss, this car is just too awesome. One step on the gas pedal and I freaking love it! But boss, didn't you say you were short on funds?” Driving this brand new Ford F750 around, Robins can only be said to be excited. Yes, excited. In fact, no matter who is driving this beast, they will all be excited. Jiang Hai doesn't have his driver's license yet, otherwise there is no way that Robins would be the one currently driving.

“There is no problem. This amount of spending can only be said to be spare change.” Jiang Hai said happily.

Yup, what Jiang Hai bought is the Ford F750. Normally the biggest pickup available on market in China is the F650 with a base price tag of 3,000,000 yuan. It is already big enough to be awe-inspiring. However in America, the bigger 750 already existed. The starting price of the 650 here is \$35,000 while the 750 is at \$48,000.

After inquiring about the prices, Jiang Hai paid the asking price without any haggling or hesitation. Swipe the card and pick up the cars. Furthermore with just this time alone, he paid for 3 trucks. 2 F750 and 1 F650. The 2 750 is for the farm while the 650 is for him to fool around with when he gets his license upgraded.

These car's prices can be considered to be pretty cheap. Compared to those supercars that easily cost a few million and on, these \$500,000 pickups can only be said to be a bargain. After paying for these trucks, Jiang Hai drove off with one on the spot. The other 2 along with Robins' old pickup will of course be delivered back to the estate by Durufle.

Along the way, Jiang Hai experienced first hand the feeling of being superior than everyone else. If he says he wasn't excited then he really is a retard. Of course the one most excited here is Robins; who is driving this beast. Their original plan was to buy the trucks first then go adopt some dogs. Generally

there are a very few places which straight up sell dogs in America; especially for likes of cattle dogs. Usually people try to request them from others. If they are rejected, then will adopt some stray dogs under the condition that they are smart enough.

However now with their new car, their plans changed. After a special round trip around the town to satisfy their cravings, they reluctantly drove to the town's animal shelter. When this black beast arrived in front of the animal shelter, all the dogs inside started to bark non stop. This is also the first time a beast of this size appeared in the town. When the workers inside heard the dog's bark, they all walked out to see what the cause is and what appeared in front of them is this monstrous beast.

Peng Peng Out came Jiang Hai and Robins as they jumped down. This car is seriously big and tall. The footstep to the ground has a distance of almost a meter. But this does not trouble Jiang Hai and Robins at all as they landed on the ground.

"Hi there, how may I help you?" A nervous girl came over and said, baffled.

Although she doesn't understand cars, but seeing the car in front of her, her instincts tell her this car is very expensive. That also means these two are definitely rich. But as to why these rich people are here, she has no clue.

"Um, it's like this. I'm the new owner of the Green Forest, and I'm thinking of raising some cows. So I am currently in need of some cattle dogs, which is why I am here to see if there are any here." Jiang Hai happily explained.

The girl in front of him is around 5'3. Caucasian, a bit chubby with some freckles.

"Oh, so it's like this, follow me." Hearing Jiang Hai is here to adopt pets, although having already guessed their intentions, the girl still smiled.

In these shelters, there are no workers, but only volunteers. It can be said most of the people who work here are all compassionate. What they really want to see is the animals here be adopted by families. Especially rich families like Jiang Hai's.

"Sorry for the inconvenience." Jiang Hai muttered before following the girl in.

As soon as they entered the shelter, Jiang Hai is astonished by it's size. This

shelter is really ... big. There are many different species here. Not only do they house pet cats and dogs, but also other types as well. In America there really isn't any nature conservation act. As long as you have the money then you can buy (adopt) what you want. The most famous of which is Mike Tyson's tigers. As long as what you raise doesn't hurt people then go ahead, this is also why there are all kinds of pets in America.

Not only is there is normal cats, dogs, fish, birds, hamsters. The unconventional spiders, lizards, snakes, turtles, martens, rabbits and so on. There are also some real predators. Such as the golden eagle that is staring directly at him as soon as he entered the shelter. Behind it is even more hawks, eagles, falcons and other small sized predators.

Apart from these predators, there is also a bunch of snakes in the opposite room. Species such as the golden python and the likes are pretty common. There is also some rare poisonous snakes, like the black mamba, king cobra and so on, here as well. Due to them entering, these beasts all raised their heads and hissed at him from their cages.

"You guys really have quite a selection here." Jiang Hai exclaimed excitedly. He doesn't have many hobbies, but the raising pets is definitely one of them. Especially when it comes to raising predators, no men will say no to them. Sadly the chinese government restricts you from raising them, but now that he is in America, he really wants to try it. Seeing all these animals, he is already making plans for them.

"Yup, you just came to America didn't you? We have pets of all kinds here. The ones here are just the small ones. All the big ones are in the back." The girl said nonchalantly.

Because the American government allows unrestrained raising of pets, there are all kinds of pets in America. But there are always some morons out there who will do everything half heartedly. When they start to raise their pets, they will say they will raise them properly and so and so. But not long after, they will get annoyed with all the this.

Under normal conditions there are two ways to solve this. One is to kill it. This tends to bring in some compensation in China since you can just sell them to

stores that specialize in these things, but is very rare in America. The second option would be to just throw them away, which is the option most Americans take. But there is also some policies in place such that these thrown away pets don't end up as stray animals who will cause some pandemic or something.

After passing the migrant birds, snakes, lizards, frogs, hamsters, cat, small and medium sized dogs, they finally arrived at the back of the shelter. Here is where all the big animals are sheltered, but the first thing that appeared in front of Jiang Hai is a freaking bear.

roar Sensing the arrival of outsiders, this beast who was originally lying down inside of it's cage suddenly stood up and roared. Seeing this more than 2 meter tall intimidating beast, even Robins began to back away. Yet due to the tattoo on him, Jiang Hai treated these animal's intimidation as nothing. Instead, it led Jiang Hai to examine this bear even more closely. Only to find it missing an eye and bear multiple scars.

"Paul, down! He is a tragic grizzly from Colorado. He was raised up by people since he was a cub. Sadly his previous owner is really a good-for-nothing. The missing eye and all those scars are all caused by them. When we found him, he was on the verge of death, but he at least is alive now. However apart from us, he has a grudge against all other humans." noticing Jiang Hai's interest, the girl explained as she hit the cage. Sure enough, the bear listened to her and lied down again, resuming its previous calmness.

Hearing her explanation, Jiang Hai nodded, but didn't say anything and continued forward. He discovered that this area for large beasts is more like a small zoo than anything else. Apart from the grizzly at the front door, there are also leopards, jaguars, black bears, river boas, and even crocodiles. According to the girl, most of the animals here are not from the Boston area. Rather they mostly came from New York ([1](#)).

He can't help but acknowledge the fact that rich people are sometimes really abnormal. But honestly, Jiang Hai can also be considered a rich person. Thus, when he saw these animals, he also had thoughts of wanting to raise some. Thinking up to here, Jiang Hai shook his head and put this matter behind him, since this is not the main reason why he is here.

After following the girl to the very back of the shelter, they arrived at the section where all the big hounds are kept. The reason why these dogs are placed behind those predators is because of their sheer volume. As soon as Jiang Hai entered, all those hounds stood up in their cages and stared unwaveringly at the group. From the looks of things, these dogs aren't as friendly as you might think.

When the girl entered a particular room, she said "All the dogs here were all cattle dogs or sheep dogs previously. They were all sent here because either their owner died or because they couldn't be supported anymore. Therefore they don't have grudges against humans. They are pretty easy to handle and all had some training before. You guys can take a look and once you have finished selecting, we can begin the adoption process."

Notes

1. Kai: We Bought a Zoo. But seriously, are there really all these animals who've been adopted? Or is this just the author taking liberties...

TL: prob half and half? I mean it's New York, considering all the weird hobbies rich ppl have and how many of them are in New York, it's not hard to for it to happen

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 30: Selected

Chapter 30: Selected

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

Hearing the girl's words, Jiang Hai looked around at the hounds kept here. Due to previous work conditions, all the dogs here all have big frames. In addition, they are all pretty smart. Seeing Jiang Hai looking at them, they might have guessed that these people are here to adopt them. So they returned Jiang Hai and Robins' looks with their own looks of curiosity.

Although Jiang Hai had never raised dogs before thus knowing next to nothing about them, this is not the case for Robins. He has raised cows for a long time and came to know a lot about them during that period of time. Hence, while observing these dogs, he also introduced them to Jiang Hai.

The majority of the dogs here are border collies. Although this breed comes from Scotland, they are not like the scotch collies. These dogs are much smarter, but also somewhat smaller. One of the best frisbee catchers out there, these dogs are best suited to herd around sheeps and a bit too weak to herd cows around. However, due to the experience they have, these veteran dogs are still able to herd cows around. Smart, good learners, good comprehension abilities, easy to train, gentle, loyal, and obedient makes these dogs the best to train.

Apart from this breed, there are also a lot of german shepherds here. These dogs generally are trained to become guard dogs. The third most numerous dog here is the ugly australian cattle dog. These dogs were specifically bred for cattle ranching, thus all 3 here were chosen by Robins on the spot. The other dogs are smarter, but when it comes to expertise of the trade, the cattle dog is the most reliable.

There are also a lot of other breeds here. Such as the smart golden retriever, but they are just too mischievous hence very little people use them as cattle dogs. If golden retrievers can't do it then obviously labrador retrievers are also out of the question. The shelter also has rottweilers and doberman pinschers. These dogs are best suited to use as hunting dogs, but to use them as cattle

dogs? You can forget about it.

This only covered a small amount of breeds here. Since Jiang Hai has no idea what to look for when picking for cattle dogs, thus everything fell on the shoulders of Robins. As for him, he went looking around for interesting breeds to adopt as pets.

The amount of pets people raise in America can be said to have reached crazy heights. This here is not a pets store but an animal shelter. However the completeness of dog breeds here covers all the breeds that Jiang Hai knows of and then some, it is even more complete than most dog markets in China. As Jiang Hai made a tour of the shelter, all the breeds he has heard of can be found here. However, of these dogs, some are aggressive while some are very passive. Some face him with curiosity and favorable impressions while others react with barks, coldly or even ignore him.

After a while of touring the place, Jiang Hai's eyes suddenly lit up. At the corner of the shelter is a huge steel cage containing a giant dog. This dog is currently crouching there and staring back at Jiang Hai. Solely from this position, it is already at his chest level. But as Jiang Hai walked towards it, it also stood up and walked towards him.

"Clang Clang. Clang Clang." Seeing this almost as big as the bear dog, Jiang Hai had no thoughts of retreating. Rather he faced it with a face full of astonishment because he is very familiar with this breed of dog. His friend, Fu Yuan, has one of these caucasian shepherd dogs at home. Only, the one he owns is not as big as this one, but, Fu Yuan's is still considered big in terms of family dogs. However, when compared to this beast, it is way out of it's league because as soon as this beast moves, it is pretty scary to watch.

Hong, HongHong. The sound this dog makes is not a normal dog's barking sounds. Rather it sounds more like the 'hong' sound from pulling a bellows. As it roared at Jiang Hai, he ignored it and continued forward.

"Seems like it really likes you." Said the girl who led them in, as she walked over from afar and patted the dog on it's head. These shepherd dogs can't be considered a smart breed but they also aren't dumb. It clearly knows this girl so it rubs her hand as soon as she came over.

“This dog is a very good pet since it hasn’t experienced much. It’s previous owner couldn’t raise it, so they left it here after it weaned along with a sizable donation. It was raised here since it was little so it has no grudges against humans.” The girl explained as she rubbed its fur. It also let out a low moan to display its happiness.

Um..... However this was all interrupted by a sudden growl from a nearby cage. As soon as it heard this sound, it’s misbehaving attitude suddenly turned to that of well-behaved and sat down with a look full of fear. Following this sound, Jiang Hai found the cage and the source of the sound. In the cage is a dog lying down. It has greyish fur with tints of blue in it, it’s pair of eyes are like that of a wolf’s but it is much bigger than a normal wolf, although a bit smaller than the german shepherd over there. Seeing it’s eyes, Jiang Hai is stunned and let out a look full of curiosity.

“That one over there is a stray mastiff. It bit 4 police officers in Boston before it was caught. A chinese specialist that I requested identified it to be a Tibetan mastiff of the blue wolf species. Although I don’t know why it is called blue wolf since it is much bigger than normal wolves, but it is currently the alpha dog here. It seems like all the other dogs here are afraid of it.” The girl introduced it with hints of fear.

“Blue wolf mastiff?” Jiang Hai is clearly stunned upon hearing that awkward-sounding chinese pronunciation.

Rumor has it that there are 3 quality species of tibetan mastiffs. The so called quality here is not the price, but its combat potential. Demon face, primal, and blue wolf ([1](#)). The demon face mastiffs is really the result of crossbreeding tibetan mastiffs with other large hounds. It has a non duplicative nature of being able to fight non stop, but it is also stupid to the point of being crazy.

Tibetan mastiffs are always said to be loyal mainly because these dogs are very stupid. Extraordinarily stupid. It is stupid to the point here they only ever remember one person. Hence the loyalty of the dog, but the demon face species is stupid to the point of no return. It can’t even remember one person. All it does it act upon its natural instinct. If it sees a dog grabbing its domain then it will attack. If it sees other animals, then they are just food. In its mind there is no fear. The proverbs say these mastiffs are afraid of everything, but the demon

faces shatters this legend resulting in its low numbers.

Primal mastiffs are just wild mastiffs caught and tamed from the tibetan plateau. Hence the name 'primal' mastiff due to its savageness it gets from being wild. As for blue wolf, it is also like the demon face, a byproduct of crossbreeding. But it's savageness is guaranteed. According to legends, if you leave 10 puppies without any food together then the only one who will remain will always be the blue wolf. Nine hounds, one mastiff is really talking about the blue wolf. However, if these really are purebreds then why would heardsmen let them fight each other? Since they are only half-breeds, they are not worth the effort to sell them.

"We are fellow townsman aren't we." Seeing this magnificent beast, Jiang Hai didn't run away like that girl. Rather he squatted in front of the cage and stared back at it.

On the other hand, when this mastiff felt Jiang Hai's stares, it immediately stared back. Just like that a man and a dog entered a staring contest, each displaying a different expression. Although there are bars separating them, but the girl is still afraid to get close even when it isn't moving. However, this isn't the case for Jiang Hai. If this was the previous him then obviously he would be scared, but now that he has the pearl and the dragon tattoo, although he is only at the python rank, but it is still better than nothing. If it is only simply facing a dog then the dragon force residing in him will not yield.

"Boss, I'm done choosing over here. 3 australian cattle dogs and 2 german shepherds. Since we're also going to raise some sheeps so I also added in 2 more border collies. In total 7 dogs." Said Robins suddenly as he walked over.

"Add on these 2 as well." Jiang Hai said as he pointed to the mastiff in front of him and the german shepherd.

"The german shepherd is fine, but the mastiff won't do. It's just too terrifying, we can't..." The girl immediately replied. The caucasus can be adopted, but due to the mastiff's history of injuring people, it's only choice is to live out it's life within the cage.

"\$100,000 as donation to the shelter and \$1000 cash as tips for your service. Any other problems?" Jiang Hai replied without thinking as he stared at the girl.

Notes

[1.](#) 鬼面、原生、青狼 – couldn't find any english versions of these sub-species of the mastiffs, hence the direct translation

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 31: Pets

Chapter 31: Pets

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

There is a major benefit in America compared to China. Since America is a capitalist country, everything revolves around money, as opposed to China, which is based around government officials. As long as you have money you can buy anything you want. In comparison to China, as long as you are a government official you can do whatever you want, as long as it matches the party's policies.

Under the pressure of \$100,000 and \$1000 tip from Jiang Hai, the 9 dogs successfully ended up at the back of their new F750. The normally noisy dogs, under the supervision of the mastiff all kept their silence. The mastiff itself didn't act as ferociously as people believed. Rather, it remained quite peaceful.

Jiang Hai then completed the adoption process. Firstly, they had to tag the dogs, record their condition at adoption and so on. Of course, they don't really have to go through all these procedures, as who would be stupid enough to doubt a \$280 million ranch owner.

As soon as all the animals entered the pickup, Jiang Hai and Robins left together. Originally, Jiang Hai wanted to ask what procedures are needed to adopt animals such as golden eagle, crocodiles, bears, jaguars and such. However, this question was straight up rejected by that girl. Although you can buy everything and anything with money, but if you want adopt these predators then you are going to be in a heap load of trouble. The majority of the predators at the shelter are caught by them, not sent to them.

As such, they really tend to hold a grudge against mankind. Hence they need to live out their lives within the shelter to prevent potential disasters. No matter how much money is thrown at them, they will not cross this bottom line.

Having transferred everybody onto the car, the two took a detour to town before heading back. This detour took them to a place that specializes in ATVs. The best transportation tool out on the grassland are horses, but their endurance can't compare to ATVs. Also, you can't ride the horses you buy

straight away, you need a period of time for it to get to know you and the likes. ATVs are also more reliable and well suited at night or during rain storms. As such, most ranches generally have some in store as back ups.

However according to Robins, he didn't really need to buy these ATVs. In America, most cowboys now-a-days are all half mechanics. For thing like ATVs, they will usually just buy the engine and create everything else like the frame and such. Take Jiang Hai's current ranch situation for example. Out of the few ATVs he owns, a couple of them are made by Robins. These ATVs are really sturdy but they come short on the protection front. Since Jiang Hai is going to upgrade most of the machinery on the estate, so he might as well as upgrade these as well, after all, safety first.

Compared to the cars they bought, ATVs are much cheaper. There are only a few major producers of ATVs, like Polaris and Bombardier. Excluding all the random changes to the base model, a good ATV can cost between \$10,000 and \$20,000. After putting down an order for 4 of them and confirming the receiving address, Jiang Hai and Robins drove that huge 750 home.

When they returned, Durufle had already shipped the 750 and 650 here. Seeing the two beasts, everyone at estate were all excited to give it a spin. Now, they can confirm that their boss has complete confidence in them to create profits for the ranch. This confirmation comes from the price tag of the beasts. I mean, who would spend this much money and want only a half assed ranch in return?

When Jiang Hai and Robins finally arrived, everyone gathered to welcome them back. The most excited of the group is definitely Philemon and Harmen. However Harmen doesn't really know how to display his feelings while Philemon's mouth is never closed. Burke on the other hand, is the most relaxed of the bunch due to his nature, but you can still see the excitement within him through his shaking hands.

Then there is Bell Lester. Although he is the youngest here, but he really has an interest in these toys. After all, a year ago, he could play with tanks, planes, and armored cars whenever he wished to. These luxurious pickups really provide him with no interest. But if it was supercars here instead, then he probably would be extremely excited because he had never driven one before.

“So boss, are we allowed to take all these beasts out for a spin later?” Philemon asked in a hard to contain manner.

“No, no, no. Those two big ones are yours. You guys can do whatever to it, but that 650 is mine.” Said Jiang Hai as he patted the 650 beside him. With 2 750s for them to play with, who would mind the 650? Although these cars belong to the ranch, but they can still drive them around.

“Alright, come help and get these dogs off.” Jiang Hai yelled as to wake everyone from their daydream.

Hearing this, everyone finally noticed the dogs at the back of the pickups. As soon as Burke heard the word ‘dog’, he immediately went to examine them. When the group saw the cattle dogs, they were all speechless at their quality.

“Nice job Robins. All of these are veterans of the field.” Burke stated as he finished examining most of them. A good cattle dog is worth half a cowboy in the fields. To the cowboys, dogs are much more important than cars. Because cars are just machines thus people will not be attached to them, but this is the complete opposite with dogs.

“Well of course.” Robins answered back full of confidence as he helped everyone transfer the dogs over to their dog house.

The dog house is right beside the cow shed. After moving all of them off the car, Philemon volunteered and went to park the beastly 750. Everyone else all helped settle the goods in. The 7 normal hounds had no trouble settling in. After all, these dogs are very friendly with people. Finally the shepherd dog and the mastiff came out, but they caused quite a stir.

When Bell tried to move the mastiff, it suddenly stood up and stared viciously at Bell. Bell was a part of Delta Forces for many years so his hands are definitely stained with blood. These people basically fear nothing. But when he stared into the mastiff’s eyes, he suddenly got a chill crawling from his tailbone all the way up to his head. His sixth sense is clearly telling him that this dog is not just a dog, but rather a ferocious predator.

“What’s up?” Asked Burke as he came over. Out of all the people here, he thinks really highly of Bell. This young man is reserved, strong and has very good cowboying skills. Although he is still somewhat unaccustomed, but the basics are

still there. After a year of practice, Bell's skills are almost on par with his. But the shocked expression he has right now is really unexpected.

"Um, nothing. Just this dog has very likely killed before." Bell explained to Burke as he shook his head.

Hearing this explanation, Burke suddenly go interested in this dog and turned to take a look. However its fine without looking, but as soon as you see it, it'll give you a massive fright. When they look face to face, what do they see in each other's eyes?

In the mastiff's eyes Burke saw nothing. Yup, nothing. In its world there is no such thing as master, friends or kin. There is only food and enemy. This is a kind of feeling where lives are worth nothing. It is different from demon face who are just crazy. The blue wolf is definitely sane, this is simply their nature.

"Um, boss? Your dog here...." Burke asked Jiang Hai hesitantly.

"Oh him, there is no problem. I have ways." Even before Burke can finish, Jiang Hai cut in and reassured him. Since he really has ways to tame him.

"Uhhhh. Alright then, if you say so." After a bit of thinking Burke answered.

This boss of his is not in the teens, rather he is in his mid to late twenties. Considering the amount of things Jiang Hai has experienced, he probably isn't the kind to take chances whenever he can. After some consideration, the two decided to listen to Jiang Hai and moved the two dogs into his mansion and left. However even after they left, they were still cautious of the mastiff, because they're sixth sense is warning them that this mastiff is truly a predator. If it's not under control, it will be on the loose to kill. As for the shepherd dog, it was ignored. Apart from it's size, this one has nothing else special about him.

"Ahh, finally done." At this moment, they settled the cattle dogs into their dog house. Regarding these cattle dogs, Jiang Hai knows nothing about them, so everything was done by Burke and Robins. After having put away all the 4 ATVs, they group finally finished everything for today.

Having been busy for the entire day and with no habit of gatherings, everyone returned back to relax. Having eaten dinner with the Turners, Jiang Hai returned back to his mansion to settle in the two dogs. The shepherd dog is out of

patience. This breed of dog has very low wisdom, pretty much on par with the three sled dogs. Clearly afraid of the mastiff on the side, it hasn't barked yet, but is walking in circles within the cage. As soon as it saw Jiang Hai, it immediately pounced forward with a look full of longing.

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 32: Bull market

Chapter 32: Bull market

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Oh right, there is still you guys.” Jiang Hai said as he saw the two. Then he went and pulled out a couple pounds of beef from the fridge. These meats are leftovers from the other day, but now they have become dog food. If people knew Jiang is using standard grade beef as dog food, they probably would bandwagon him to death and then some. These are truly rich people’s problems.

After roughly cooking the beef in the oven, Jiang Hai took them and placed it in front of the dogs. Having smelled the beef, the shepherd dog immediately came over with his tongue sticking out. on the other hand the mastiff just used it’s cold eyes and coldly stared at Jiang Hai.

“Although I have no idea how you detected my presence, but now that you did, you can become one of my subordinates.” Jiang Hai said as he pulled out a pocket knife and poked a small cut on his fingers.

Soon 3 drops of blood followed out and ended up on the beef. He felt the uncomfortable sensation that came from losing blood, the tattoo on his body also lost 9 scales. Seeing Jiang Hai’s actions, the shepherd dog is completely lost, but the mastiff can clearly tell what he is doing. From those tiny droplets of blood, it clearly felt the power it contains.

Having separated the beef into two piles, 40% for the german shepherd and 60% for the mastiff, and thrown the meat into their cages, Jiang Hai is still lost on why he did so. 3 droplets of blood in his current state is the same as paying a couple hundred million for no apparent reason. These kind of actions generally tend to be very misleading and confusing at times, but he trusted his intuition; at least he made them smarter. Not thinking about it anymore, Jiang Hai smiled bitterly and went to sleep.

As for the mastiff and the shepherd, they ate the meat and did nothing else of interest. After finishing eating, the shepherd yawned and fell into a deep slumber on the spot. The mastiff on the other hand forced himself to finish everything

before lying down to sleep in a corner of the cage.

After a peaceful night, Jiang Hai woke up to find these two still asleep. He can feel the evolution these two are experiencing. Having confirmed their peaceful state, Jiang Hai did not stay to see the end results and left. Because today, he is going cow shopping.

Having eaten breakfast with the Turners, Jiang Hai, Robins, Philemon and Burke drove the 2 F750s and headed towards the livestock market at the north end of Winthrop. Due to the pungent smell of the livestock, there is no way the market can be located in the middle of cities and towns; it can only be located near the outskirts of these places.

At the northern outskirts of the town is a livestock market. All types of livestock are traded here, but it mainly focuses on cattle and sheeps. Since this market is organized by NGOs, it is only open on some days of the month. Normally, it opens bi-weekly, on the first saturday and the third saturday of the month. This time, Jiang Hai and the others are just on time for one of these sessions.

For most farm owners, the pickups they own all belong to a certain tier. For the likes of F150, no one would be dumb enough to drive them here because they are not able to pull the load necessary, its only purpose is that of a transportation tool for the people. However, as soon as the 2 F750s appeared, it became the biggest eye magnet. When the 4 exited the pickups, before they can even stand firmly, some people already came over to meet them.

“Hey Robins. Woah, Burke and Philemon are also here, then this must be the mysterious owner of Green Forest.” This person hasn’t even reached them but his voice can already be heard. Upon hearing this voice, Philemon and the others are already smiling. Clearly this person is well known around here.

“Hey Leymann! Weren’t you in Texas? How come you’re here?” Philemon asked back quickly. This Leymann person looks in this mid 40s, caucasian, has a big fat stomach and also bald. On his big head it’s a very common cowboy’s hat, but however you look at it, the hat appears to be a size smaller than his head .

“Haha, I don’t feel comfortable in Texas, hence I am still here on our glorious east coast.” The fat man replied. From the looks of things this person has a very

straightforward personality.

“Boss, let me introduce to you Leymann Fry. One of the most famous cow brokers here. If we are looking to buy cows, then no matter what we will require his help.” Robins stated happily.

“Hi there, my name is Jiang Hai. You can called me Jiang or Hai, either is fine.” Jiang Hai said as they shook hands.

“Nice to meet you, nice to meet you. Please call me Leymann.” Hearing this, Leymann specifically said nice to meet you in Chinese. From the looks of things, he practised this phrase a lot, but that is probably the extent of his Chinese vocabulary. “I have special interest in the mysterious oriental. When I retire, I will definitely visit that especially long wall and those soldiers buried underneath the emperor’s palace.”

“Um.. they are called the Great Wall and the Terracotta Army.” Jiang Hai corrected after some hesitation.

“When you retire? Too late man, in this profession, we don’t even know if we can live till then.” Philemon retorted since the legal retirement age in America is really late.

There are always people in China complaining about the unbearable retirement policy. However compared to Europe and America, China’s retirement policy can be said to be much better. In America you have to be, on average, 66 before you can retire and the pension is generally \$1000 or so. In China you only have to pay your retirement fees for only 15 years, however in America under the IRS’ strict control you have to pay this retirement fund fees and other fees every year. If you don’t, then they will come looking for you.

Hence most people have to pay over 40 years of the pension fee. When they finally retire, they only receive a monthly check of around \$1000. Of course, if you change this to yuan then it’s more, but where would you find places to spend yuan in America? It’s even worse in Europe. Retirement age over there is 70 and the pension they receive there is generally the same as those in America. Some european countries might give even less than America. From the looks of things, China can be said to be much better in this area.

“Alright, on to business. We are here to buy some cows, got any good

recommendations?” After soon time, Burke walked over, gave Leymann a cig and asked.

“For Green Forest? You can raise over 100,000 heads there. How many you looking to buy this time?” Leymann asked the four after taking a puff.

“The time only 20,000.” Jiang Hai replied according to his original plan.

“20,000 heads? That’s quite something. If you’re looking for mature cows then that would cost millions. Really is a big bill to fulfill.” Leymann said with a look full of excitement.

In fact, cow brokers generally employ middleman because they have the connections. Whoever wants to buy cows and whoever wants to sell cows can talk to them. Then they take a cut from these sales. This is completely different from the middleman in China. The cows here have a clear price set on them, so they at most get a cut from this transaction. Generally you can tell how much they earn just from how many cows are involved.

“Roughly 20,000 in total. We’re going to first take a look around for some good quality cows. If there are any room left, then we’ll contact you.” If you give all 20,000 to Leymann, then he can earn at least \$500,000 from the transaction.

This is not something Philemon and the others will take while still standing. Hence this statement, as they still don’t want Jiang Hai to be ripped off. However on the other side, Leymann isn’t prepared to lie them for this sale. It’s 20,000 heads, this big of a cake, he definitely can’t finish, so might as well give some of it out and earn some reputation from it.

“Alright, let’s head that way. There should be some good stocks by the auction stand.” Said Leymann as he guided the 4 into the market’s auction area.

In the middle of this market is a small stage used for auctioning. There are also many viewing platforms to inspect the auctioned item. Because of the familiarity of the people here, there is no need for cash deposits or auction plates and such. Whichever cow you fancy, all you have to do is raise your hand. This is also the first time Jiang Hai attended an auction, hence his nervousness and seriousness can be understood.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 33: Buying cows

Chapter 033: Buying cows

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“The cows auctioned here generally fall under three categories. Bulls, small herds and special herds. If you guys are looking to buy, then you can do so here. The cows I have tend to be a bit worse than those sold here.” Leymann said as he sat down in one of the auction seats.

Hearing this, Jiang Hai turned to Robins for an explanation. Out of the 3 types, he only knows what a bull is. These are male cattles left “intact” for breeding purposes ([1](#)). But what are the last two groups?

“Small herds refer to low numbers. For example when some family farm stop wanting to raise cattle, then they will send them here to be sold. Generally these cattle counter are under 100, hence this category, they also can be either bought separately or together. Special herds refers to those special cows.” Robins explained. In America, the most commonly raised cattle is of course their favourite. Angus.

This breed has no horns, can endure coarse feeds, and is said to be the world’s best beef cow. A mature male one weighs from 700 to 1100 kg. A female one ranges between 500 and 800 kg. Gentle nature, daily weight gain of roughly 1kg, nice marbling in all the cuts, with a high meat output of around 60-65% results in being well-received in America. Apart from this breed, Brahman, Charolais, Hereford and Piedmontese are also well received in America. These cows tend to have a very high butcher rate. Compared to these fine breeds, the cows in China falls miles behind.

The most famous in China should be the Luxi cattle, Qinchuan cattle, and Nanyang cattle. But these breeds have a very low butcher rate. If it can reach 50% meat output with all the bits and pieces then you just got lucky. These cows originally weren’t raised for eating but be used as oxens in the field. If you’re talking about strength or attacking power then these breeds completely outclass the one in America and Europe, but if it’s quality and quantity then they lack far

behind.

The key lies with the near 15% difference. Meat quantity from 100 heads in America can match if not surpass 115 heads from China. The other key factor is the population density of America. The 9.8 million square kilometers for less than 325 million people, there are tons of land that can be used for ranching, but this is not possible in China.

High population level leads to low concentration of ranches. Add on the poor breeds and obstructions of fence construction, if prices for beef are still low, then something is really wrong. Although people have thought about importing in breeds, but this was banned by the central government. Those already imported in limousin and simmental cattle has a really hard time breeding, resulting in hard expansion of the industry. Currently China much more prefer to raise milk cows for the same reason.

“Next up are the bulls.” Robins said after a quick introduction. Currently the first round of auction is already over. In the wake of the auctioneer’s words, the first bull walked up. This one is clearly bigger and stronger than the ones Jiang Hai is thinking of.

In the animal world, everything follows the laws of nature. Therefore to be a bull, the first criteria they have to meet is their size must be big. These bulls put up for auction are all the best of the best. Hence their size is way bigger than the norms.

This is a charolais weighing in at 1211kg. Seeing this strong frame and limbs, you need at least 3-5 people to handle him when he goes mad. But charolais are well known for their gentle temper. “Just like their french ancestors, gentle till the end.” The auctioneer joked and was received by a round of laughter from the cowboys.

What he is talking about is during WWII when the French got defeated by the Germans, they kept on their romantic and comfortable living instead of resisting. This was really an awkward situation for the allies, but to say this in America is also not a smart idea. Because most of the Americans are all descendants of French and English colonists. Actually there is something that Jiang Hai is not aware of. After colonizing America, the French and the English never had a

period of peace. Why is Boston situated in a region called New England? That is because the people here are mostly of English descent so they love making fun of the French.

“Do we need him?” Jiang Hai asked Robins as he examined the bull quickly.

“Our ranch is going to mainly raise Angus because there are only the Angus and Brahman near Boston with the numbers we need. If we bring that bull back then there is definitely going to be a lot of disturbance and the quality of the meat when butchered will also suffer.” explained Robins.

Hearing this, Jiang Hai sat back and watched the auction continue; after all it's not like he knows anything about ranching. Although they don't want it, others do. In the end, this bull was sold for a whopping \$3200. Normally, a head of cattle is worth around \$1000 when sold in herds.

The next couple of bulls are of charolais, hereford and piedmontese breeds. When it was the piedmontese turn up, Robins clearly is agitated because piedmontese is a very well off breed. They are not known their their meat, since they produce very average meat both in quality as well as in quantity. They are really famous for their hides. A whole sheet of mature cow's hide can fetch \$1000 easily. Of course the leather market is very limiting. This breed is also well known for their wild nature.

If it's only a small group then it is easier to control, but if a large group of them go mad, then have fun and good luck, because you are going to need it. Hence, after some thinking, he quickly gave up on the idea.

Auctions like this are not just made up of bulls. After auctioning these bulls, there is the auction of small herds. This time on stage is not just a single head of cattle but 30 heads. All of these cattle are tagged but they are not hard to identify with their completely black hide.

“These are angus cattle, we can start joining in now.” Said Robins.

“Alright next up for sale is the herd belonging to Par's ranch. We all know old Par is almost 70 and that he wants to retire. His only daughter will not succeed his ranch so these cows also must go. We all know how old Par raises his cattles, so there is definitely no problems with them. In total 30 heads. 1 bull, 23 cows with 5 already pregnant, and 6 calves under 1 year old. Now let us start the

auction with the sale of the whole herd. If the resulting price does not meet Par's expectations then we'll auction them off separately." Explained the Auctioneer.

Everyone who are in this line of business all know something about everyone. They clearly know of the old man's skills so these cows definitely will sell. As such people are calling prices as soon as the auction began. Very quickly this herd of 30 is worth \$30,000, but not even a minute passed before it grew to \$42,000. Robins is also interested in them but suppressed he urges and waited for the right moment.

"\$45,000" When someone called \$44,900, Robins joined in by adding on another hundred.

"These cows are definitely in good condition. Those pregnant cows are probably going to give birth soon. In a year those calves can also hit the market. It doesn't matter what the quality of this herd is since you are actually paying for 35 of them." Burke commented.

"Of course, the main reason is Par's raising skills. For these cows, it doesn't matter if it's male or female, they all have some nice marbling on them. Without incidents, it is very likely for them to produce top-notch beef. When the time comes, those beef profits will skyrocket for sure." Philemon joined in after being quiet for the whole time.

Beef is separated into 8 grades in America, but the price for top-notch beef is expensive to the point of being cringe worthy. A pound of the finest beef is generally between 3 to 500 dollars. A head of cow, on average, weighs 800 kg or 2000 lbs. After removing the bones and what not, you are left with 1300 lbs of pure meat. Using the ratio of only 10% as prime grade beef, a pound of raw beef for \$375, then 10% of a single head of cow is worth almost \$50,000.

Once you add on all the other meats, choice at \$100 plus a pound, select at \$50 a pound, and standard for \$6-8 a pound, then that is almost \$100,000 for a good head of cow. Of course half of the profit is taken up by it's best quality meat, but Robins really expect old Par's cows to live up to this expectation.

However Jiang Hai is clearly in awe upon doing the math, but quickly recovered. Others can doubt him, whether his cows are going to lose money. But he himself is clearly confident. With the cooperation of his blood, these cows will

have the best meat when slaughtered. Furthermore the quantity of the best quality meat available will most likely cause a small war.

Notes

1. for more information <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cattle>

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 34: Domesticated

Chapter 34: Domesticated

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

Whether the butcher rate will increase by adding blood to their food, Jiang Hai has no clue. But he has a feeling that the quantity of top tier meat from his cows will definitely be greater than 10%. It might even be greater than 15%.

Furthermore this is only prime grade beef. All other cuts of meat will probably come out at worst standard grade. Then how much is this head of cow worth?

At the least \$200,000? 20,000 heads, each worth \$200,000, that is a total of 2 billion american dollars! After taxes and everything, Jiang Hai will get to keep only 1 billion.

How long would it take for him to receive returns for his investment? Hehe, Jiang Hai suddenly felt he was too retarded before.

What is money? Money is a bitch ([1](#)). As long as he wants to, he can earn it whenever he wants. An annual income of at least \$1 billion from the ranch, then what about the fishery?

Others mainly raise cod, herring, mackerel and the likes, but these fish will never have a high profit margin. But what if he forgoes these mainstream ideas and decides to raise atlantic salmon or even tuna? Not including the legendary bluefin, just with yellowfin alone, that is an annual income of at least several billions. Wait, what you say? It's impossible to raise these? That's a problem for others, but this does not bother Jiang Hai at all.

Thinking up to here, Jiang Hai suddenly felt his heart pumping. From the looks of things, he is pretty much sitting on a gold mine. As such he stopped paying any attention to the auction and left everything to Robins and people.

They bought 90% of all the angus that showed up. Here on the east coast, the original livestock industry is at a dead end, as such, there are rarely any big farms importing this many animals. So they only got their hands on a total of 1200 heads of angus. The quality of this batch are also much better than the ones

Leymann can get.

As for the other 19,000 heads, they went around and ordered 3900 from sources they trust within the local area and gave the rest for Leymann to arrange. To be exact, they swept the local region of all saleable angus that are of average or above quality. They can also reject the shipment from Leymann if the cows he provides are not up to their standards.

In the evening of the same day, Jiang Hai and his two F750s each pulled a trailer containing their 5100 heads of cattle back to the estate. On the estate side, Bell and Harmen had already prepared the cow shed and are just waiting for the arrival of the cows.

The first thing that these cows did upon arrival is to calm down, then get familiar with this stretch of grassland. Even after herding them back into the shed for the night, the day isn't over for the cowboys. They still need to watch the cows for a period of time to confirm their behaviour. However, all the cowboys on the ranch know exactly what they need to do. Tonight, Philemon, Burke, and Harmen all pull an all-nighter to keep an eye on the cows.

Being the owner of the estate, Jiang Hai also checked in. But strange a thing happened after his check in. The original chaotic heard suddenly calmed down and began to wolf down the feed that was delivered by him. Clearly these workers didn't know that Jiang Hai dripped a drop of his blood onto those feed.

The power contained within his blood is hard to resist and is from the legendary dragon. As such, Jiang Hai didn't give out too much, rather he diluted it in water to a ratio of 1 to 10,000. Then, using his free time in the last couple days, he watered a region of land with this water. Due to the large stretch of land he owns, he only managed to water about 5% of it. But the results can clearly be seen. The grass that absorbed the diluted water clearly outgrew those who haven't.

The feed he delivered today is directly from that stretch of grassland. When he has finished watering all the grassland, then that piece of land will probably become a cow's heaven. However, right now, whether if it is cow's heaven he has no clue, but it definitely is bug's heaven. When Jiang Hai visited this stretch of land in the evening, he clearly saw millions of firefly lying on the grass blades,

illuminating that whole stretch of land.

Seeing this sight, Jiang Hai can't help but think of raising some chickens to hunt down these bugs. Since getting rid of them is really a troublesome task. Either way, the cows have calmed down and nothing major happened during the night. The next morning when Jiang Hai finally woke up, he found the mastiff and the german shepherd have finally woke up from their slumber.

Compared to their previous self, these two clearly looked better spirited. The german shepherd still looks like his old self but if you take a close look at his eyes, then you will find a hint of alertness it previously didn't have. The mastiff also had major changes, and his fur looked much more supple than before. He also kept his normal cold stare for everything expect when he is looking at Jiang Hai.

"Looks like it worked." Seeing the two massive beasts in front of him, Jiang Hai muttered to himself as he let both of them out of their cage. As soon as the german shepherd crawled out, it first took a sniff of the surroundings then quickly left the mansion. Just as Jiang Hai was wondering what he is up to, the german shepherd found a clear place and went to work. Both big and small came together. When finished, he wobbled over reluctantly.

Woof woof, Woof woof. Having finished it's personal needs, the german shepherd came in front of Jiang Hai, sat down and barked with excitement. Seeing this, Jiang Hai can confirm that the dogs have finished their evolution.

"Down, shake, turn." Jiang Hai commanded.

Perhaps they didn't understand what was wanted of them before, but now they understood the majority of it. Under Jiang Hai's commands, they followed along. Although sometime they might make a mistake, but once corrected, they understood what was wanted of them. Upon seeing these results, Jiang Hai can't help but smile as these results are naturally the best.

"You're big, full of fur, and can be traced back to Russia. How about I call you Russian from now on? No, that sounds too dumb, then what do I call you? Blacky? Furry? How about dumby? (2)" Jiang Hai muttered to himself as he tried to come up with a good name for the dog. Since he is going to raise them, then they need a good name, but clearly, he doesn't have the skills to come up with a suitable name.

Jiang Hai recalled in China, dogs generally are named after their fur colors. For example, Whitey, Black, Yellowy and what not. However if he call him Big Blacky then that somehow doesn't feel right on this beast. With a sudden thought, he came up with a great name.

"How about Po? Hum... Great name." Jiang Hai continued as he patted the dog's head. Calling a black dog Po, Jiang Hai really has some strange tastes.

Having finished naming the german shepherd, he turned his attention to the mastiff. But Jiang Hai didn't find him in his cage, rather, he is outside doing his own personal business. After finishing, the mastiff walked back and sat down beside his cage.

"What, what is this?" Don't they all say mastiffs are stupid, but this mastiff clearly has increased wisdom after his evolution. He even remembered which cage belonged to him after Jiang Hai opened it just once. He now even knows how to open his cage with his paws!

wooo Feeling Jiang Hai's looks, the mastiff open and closed his mouth then walked up to Jiang Hai and lied down with his belly up. As if telling Jiang Hai of his goodwill, and willingness to serve or wanting to be spoiled. With this mastiffs nature, he clearly is displaying the first not the latter.

"You really are smart." Jiang Hai said as he rubbed this mastiffs belly, but the mastiff is still clearly unaccustomed to being around with humans.

"Since you also came out, then you also need a name. He has black fur, so calling him Po fits, but you have gray fur, so how about ... Little Blacky? Or Little Azure? No, you're also not a snake." Jiang Hai said as he continued to ponder while patting and rubbing the mastiff. "Then let's call you Yun! Um. This name sounds great, then your name is set."

Calling the black german shepherd Po is understandable, since white is the new black. But this doesn't apply to the mastiff as he has no spots of yellow fur on him. Sadly, Jiang Hai clearly enjoys this name so that is what he settled with.

Having finished naming them, he happily lead the two out of the mansion. However, they didn't walk far before they meet Bell on his way back from the cow shed. This sight gave him quite a scare, to be exact, seeing the mastiff beside Jiang Hai without any restrictions gave him the scare. As he has no idea

why Jiang Hai let him out.

Notes

[1.](#) Kai: >.> ^.^ <..> -.-

[2.](#) Kai: Russian sounds dumb, lets call him dumby...

Dog names:

We thought it was better to have Po or Yun instead of whitey and yellowy

For white we could have Bai (白) or Po (潘) (since Po is from kung fu panda :D)

For yellow we could have Yun (煥) or Huang (黄) (Yun sounds better ^.^)

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 35: Hellish shed

Chapter 35: Hellish shed

Translated by me, edited by Kai

“Boss, be careful!” Bell yelled as he prepared to pull out his piece. All americans are allowed to carry as long as you have a gun license. Not mentioning the ex-Delta Force Bell, everyone on the estate, except for Harmen who is not allowed to own one, all have their own personal piece.

Most of the older generation like to play with hunting rifles and shotguns. The bigger the better. However, since Bell was an ex-forces member he owns a whole set. Pistols, SMGs, assault rifles, hunting rifles, shotguns, the whole shebang. If anyone ordinary wants to get their hands on assault rifles and SMGs, then they are in for a load of paperwork.

In addition, no average American is allowed to carry it on their person. If Jiang Hai got a license, then he can only keep it locked up at home or in its case in the trunk of his car. If he is found carrying by the police, then that is not a small problem. If caught near a school while carrying, then that becomes a big problem.

As Bell reflexively prepared to pull out his gun, before his hands had even reached the gun, Yun had already dashed towards him. By the time he had pulled the gun half way out of its holster, Yun, with his insane speed, is already by his side. With a sudden leap and with Yun’s wide open salivating mouth, Bell foresaw his death.

“Back!” Suddenly came Jiang Hai’s command, which Yun promptly heeded. He closed his mouth and returned to Jiang Hai’s side. He remained alert but did not display any signs of ferocity. On the other hand, Bell found himself sweating bullets.

“Relax, he won’t go around biting people as long as you don’t point a gun at me or him.” Jiang Hai commented as he lovingly petted the mastiff. Bell holstered his gun and wondered whether or not he would be dead if he had actually completely pulled it out.

What Bell is carrying with him is a Glock 17. It is unknown whether it will have any effect on beasts like Yun. Seeing no imminent threat coming from the beast, Bell hesitated for a while before deciding to trust this boss of his by putting his gun away. But taking only 2 days to tame a beast like this is an impossibility in itself.

“Alright boss. If he will actually listen to commands, then he will no doubt become our best security guard in the future.” Bell replied after letting out a long sigh. Hearing this, Yun barked lightly before leading the scared Po away.

Watching the two dogs leave, Jiang Hai returned his attention back to Bell and asked. “What are you doing this early?”

“Early? Boss, we’ve already been up for more than 3 hours. I only came back to get the lasso.” Replied Bel as he took a look at his watch.

“Ah? 3 hours?” Jiang Hai took a look at his cell phone to find that it is already past 8am. Doesn’t that mean that they were up since 5?

“It really isn’t easy being a cowboy.” Bell commented as he saw the shocked expression on Jiang Hai’s face. Then he explained their working hours.

By being a cowboy, you basically can’t sleep when you’re working. Everyday, they have to wake up extremely early to let the cows onto the pastures. Otherwise, the cows will be hungry, they also need to clean out the cowshed while the cows are grazing. No one will really believe that cleaning out the cow dung is light work right?

Basically, all ordinary farms start their day off at around 6 am and only have to take care of several dozens of cows. If they are like Jiang Hai with 5000 or so heads, then 5 am might be a bit early. But if there were another 15,000 heads then they would have to get up at 5am at the latest.

“These cows really have some adaptability. Only taking a night to calm down. Uncle Robins said we can let them out to see what happens. Hence I am getting the lassos. If a cow really left the herd then it really is troublesome to get it back, especially when we don’t have horses yet.” Bell continued after seeing the curious look Jiang Hai was giving.

Considering the fact that he has nothing to do, as such, he followed Bell back

to the shed. When they arrived at the shed, the first sight they see is a field of black cows with their heads down, eating like mad. Around them are the cowboys on ATVs, but they are just too short for the job making them extremely annoyed. Normally, using ATVs to patrol the estate is fine, but using them to watching the cows is asking for too much.

Edward also came out to help, but from the looks of things there isn't anything for him to help with.

"Hey boss, you came." Seeing Jiang Hai, Robins got off of his ATV and came over with a smile. "Look at our beautiful herd. It's just too good. They are already familiar with the surroundings after just a single night. Looks like our grassland is just too legendary."

"Bullshit, all bullshit! It's not the grass that is good, but my blood!" Jiang Hai yelled inside. This stretch of grassland has already been watered with his blood. Adding on the feed that he delivered last night, of course the cows would be calm. Under normal conditions, these cows need at least a week before they can be let out. Otherwise they will run around everywhere and cause trouble for you along the way. How can that be compared to this, being able to be released out on the second day in.

"It's because you guys picked the best ones. Are there any other problems with the cows? Anything I can help with? Being the boss, I at least need to do something for the ranch." Jiang Hai said.

"The cows currently have no problems, we also need to keep an eye on them. If you really want to, then you can help Harmen out with cleaning out the shed." Robins stated.

Foreigners usually never beat around the bush. If you say you are going to help out, then they really will think of something for you to help out with. Monitoring the cows is definitely a no, because if the cows riot or a couple of them run away, it requires the watchers to lasso them back. Since Jiang Hai doesn't know how to, then he can only do supporting tasks like help cleaning out the shed.

"Alright!" Jiang Hai nodded and headed towards the shed. However not long after he entered, he is already out. This smell, it's simply too much.....

"Where the fk did I just enter? The public dumpster?" lying down on the

grassland not far away is Jiang Hai in a disoriented state. The smell inside the shed is just too strong. Too freaking strong. Ever since coming to America, he hasn't smelled odors as strong as this.

"You ok there boss?" Out of nowhere came Harmen's voice. However his appearance is completely different from Jiang Hai. He is wearing a gas mask; it seemed the cowboys had come prepared.

"Oh, I came over to see if there is anything I can help with." Jiang Hai replied after taking a few long, deep breaths. This time, he clearly didn't mean what he said because at the same time as he was speaking, he was already walking away.

"Oh, it's almost done. When I was working for other ranches, the bosses weren't willing to pay the money to get cleaning machines so we can only use a broom and do everything by hand. That was really something to endure. Now that we have a cleaning machine, a round with this and we're almost done. Later, when all the cows are here and you still want to help out then feel free to come. Since by then I might not be able to handle all of this alone." Harmen slowly explained everything to Jiang Hai.

To be honest. Jiang Hai knows the situation with Harmen. He wasn't born like this. Originally he was just like any other kid. However this all changed when he was 13. At that time his family went to Boston for holidays, but later was robbed there. During the robbing, the robber killed his parents ([1](#)).

Maybe it was because of the trauma during this incident, his brain now does everything at a slower pace. If it wasn't for the older people in town taking care of him every now and again, he probably would've died of hunger long time ago. When he turned 16, he was taken in by an old cowboy who taught him the skills of the trade, so that at least he won't starve to death.

After many years, the old cowboy has passed away but Harmen has mastered the skills. He generally doesn't speak much to outsiders, to those who he is familiar with, he will be open with them. Although he speaks slowly, he still likes to chat a lot.

Jiang Hai, in his view, is a great person. One who lets him live in a big house, provides good food, and also gives out good wages. Since he likes Jiang Hai very much, thus anything he can do, he will do it to the best of his abilities to return

the favour.

“Alright then. I’ll stop making this worse than it already is. Do it well.” Having congratulated Harmen on his work, Jiang Hai left. He seriously doesn’t want to remain there any longer. That is simply hell. Yes hell. It really is hell. And it really needed to be described thrice.

Notes

1. Kai: He’s the hero the ranch deserves, and the one Jiang Hai needs right now (to clean :P)

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 36: Horses

Chapter 36: Horses

Translated by me, edited by Kai

Sigh Jiang Hai let out a sigh after taking a long look at the mirror. Within the mirror is his tattoo with all its scales and it's glory.

"Sure enough, to raise my powers, apart from the power coming from the plants and the environment, the amount of animals here also matter." Jiang Hai said excitedly to himself.

Today is the seventh day after he bought the cows. Yesterday, Lehmann delivered 15,000 heads of cows that he had ordered. Out of the 15,200 heads, 900 of them were rejected by Robins and the others due to their poor quality. As a result, they have a bit less than 20,000 heads of the estate. This 20,000 mark is only an approximation. It's fine if they are over or under by a little bit.

Jiang Hai doesn't understand any of this, but Robins and others clearly do. To make a good impression on their boss, they put in all their efforts and pointed out all the cows that have or may have some negative conditions. Towards this, Leymann can only keep his mouth shut and accept it. But even with the rejections, he still made a huge profit, enough to last him for the next few years.

Before he left, Leymann specially left behind 1000 lambs for Jiang Hai. Lambs in America are quite cheap when compared to the prices in China. Although Jiang Hai quite likes roast lamb, but the prices in China before he left were quite a barrier. A single roasted leg of lamb cost over 300 yuan, and the cost of a whole roasted lamb is beyond imagination.

However he is in luck now having moved to America. This lamb herd is definitely not for sale, rather, it will be used to satisfy his cravings. After having settled all the livestock, Jiang Hai discovered a huge problem.

This problem comes from the amount of scales on his body. These couple of days, there were no increases in the number of scales. Three scales a day for a drop of blood which needs to be diluted and used to water the grass. After many

days of hard work, he has finally finished watering all the grass near the shed. These grass now appear much more lush and grow much quicker. At the same time, the amount of power they provide also increased.

The cow's growth speed has somewhat increased, but it is still not very clear after just 1 week. As for the newly arrived cows, they calmed down quite nicely after consuming the nearby grass.

However when the 5000 heads of cows just moved in, Jiang Hai felt an minute increase in the growth rate of his scales. From the normal 3 pieces a day to almost 4 pieces a day. He originally thought this change was a mistake, but he was delighted after all the cows and the lambs had settled. The normal 8 hour growth period has been shorted to just 3 hours. This means an increase of 8 scale pieces a day.

The snake tattoo requires a total of 1080 scales. Under his current growth speed, it will only take roughly 135 days before he ranks up. This is only the result of the ranch expansion. If he starts to raise fish in the near future, then the results will be much better.

Looks like there really is hope to rank up! Thinking up to here, Jiang Hai suddenly thought of his current problem. The need to water all the grass in the ranch. According to the area remaining, he still needs approximately 200 for drops before it's all watered. 200 drops meant 600 scales, which is quite a long time to wait. However, there isn't much he can do about it. He can only wait this period out slowly. Since he bought this piece of land, then of course he needs make to make it worth something.

After letting out a long sigh again, Jiang Hai put on his new bathrobe and entered his bedroom. Having turned on the TV, he then lied down beside the 2 dogs on the huge bed. Feeling the incoming Jiang Hai, the two didn't dodge, rather they searched for a more comfortable position with him there and accompanied him in watching the 3D TV.

While watching TV, Jiang Hai is thinking what to do tomorrow. He had passed these days with almost the same routine. Wake up, feed the dogs, and then water the ranch with his blood diluted water. Rest during noon and procrastinate in the afternoon, since he has all the time in the world.

If it wasn't for Robins commandeering all the ATVs for work, then he would've taken one to the beach. Since walking there seriously takes too long.

Having gotten some roast meat from the Turner's, he fed some of it to the dogs and then proceeded to enjoy his food with some beer on the balcony. Feeling the wind, seeing the stars, these days passed quite pleasantly.

Of course, if this was someone else, then they might find this lifestyle boring. But for a previous otaku like Jiang Hai, this kind of lifestyle is what they imagined having.

*Dlinglingling...." Just as Jiang Hai was about to go to bed, his headboard phone suddenly rang. This phone is not like his cell phone as this one is specifically designed to be used inside the estate. Having woken Yun up, he quickly went to retrieve the phone which was followed by Jiang Hai answering it.

"Hey boss, it's me Robins. I want to know when are we going to go buy horses." Hearing the connection, Robins spoke. But upon hearing this, Jiang Hai was dumbstruck. So this was what he forgot.

"Any time!" For cowboys, a horse is a must have. Although ATVs are faster and can be used longer, but they also have many down sides. One, they have bad response timing at fast speeds. Two, it's just too short. Fine for regular patrols, but impractical for watching the herd. Three, it's a machine so it's not as comfortable during use compared to horses. Jiang Hai has already inquired about the acquisition of horses from Bell, but due to recent events everyone had forgotten about it.

"Then let's go tomorrow. This time we have too many cows, although they are currently very docile, but who knows what they might do later. So let's have them stay inside for the next few days and wait for the cattle dogs to be ready before letting them out again." Hearing Jiang Hai's response, Robins continued.

What do these cowboys really want to buy? For sure cows place number one. Then it is not cars or dog, but rather horses since they allow them to do their jobs more effectively.

"Sure, tomorrow it is." Jiang Hai confirmed that he has got nothing planned tomorrow and answered.

“Alright, tomorrow it is.” Hearing Jiang Hai’s confirmation, Robins replied and hung up.

Jiang Hai played some games before heading to bed early with the two dogs. The two also know the rules for staying in Jiang Hai’s room. One they must go outside to use the bathroom and two they can’t bring or eat anything within the room.

The morning of the next day, well it’s 8 am but it’s still considered early for Jiang Hai, he is already up. He first got a meal of spaghetti and sausages from Mrs.Turner then left for the horse farms with Robins.

Originally Jiang Hai loved to eat western food, since in China, it is considered a luxury and a symbol of class. Even a fast food meal cost a hundred yuan. By his previous income standards, he really is unwilling to spend this money. Now having moved to America where these things are cheap as all heck, what is there to stop him from eating his fill of them? Hence he has been eating these for the past while. What Mrs.Turner makes isn’t burger and the likes, but it is still high calorie food. At the same time, Jiang Hai isn’t afraid of being fat, since his body is just too OP ([1](#)).

Now he really wanted to have some Chinese cooking. Stuff like bean curd, crepe, and fried dough is what he really craves. But now the problem is both he and Mrs.Turner don’t know how to make them and he really don’t want to eat those sweet and sour foods forever.

Because he is still waiting for his licence, so he can only look and not drive his cars. Leaving the estate with a 750, they didn’t head towards Winthrop, rather towards Boston. Winthrop is a coastal town so there are a lot of fishing gear and boats up for sale but no horses. Due to risk of hurricane and the likes, most horse farms are further inland.

After half an hour on the road, they arrived at a medium-sized ranch. However this ranch does not raise cows but horses of all kinds. Having parked the car, they were met with someone as soon as they exited.

“Hey Bob, it’s me.” Robins yelled as he waved. The recipient of this yell was clearly stunned, but came greeting with smiles.

“I was wondering which moron would drive a beast like this to my farm. I

thought it was some idiot from Boston, but never thought it would be you.” This person stated while happily exchanging greetings with Robins.

Notes

1. Kai: I want this too q.q

(Ad support) TOC (Ad support)

Chapter 37: Bob's Horses

Chapter 37: Bob's horses

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Let me introduce you to each other” Robins introduced. “This is my new boss. Jiang Hai.”

Although Bob hadn't met Jiang Hai in person, the recent activities of Green Forest were spread far and wide. Almost everyone who are in the agricultural sector have heard news from their grapevines, because no one in America want to get on the bad side of anyone with money, of course thugs and gangsters are also included.

“Hi, I'm Bob, the owner of this horse ranch.” Bob introduced himself as they shook hands.

“Hi, I'm called Jiang Hai. You can call me Jiang or Hai, either is fine.” Jiang Hai replied. Having finished introductions, Robins got straight to the point. “Bob, we need some horses.”

“I thought so. I heard Leymann gave you guys 15,000 heads of cattle. The size of that transaction really is some shocking news around here. Alright, enough chit chat, let's see which one of these boys are lucky today. ” Bob was clearly prepared for their arrival; he just didn't know when they would show up. Without much delay, they headed towards the stable in the back.

According to Robins, Bob's horse farm is the biggest around here. There are over 1000 horses on the farm specifically for the farms and the ranches on the east coast. He is also one of the best handler and raiser of horses around, even some horses used in the West are imported from here. However, the ranching sector in America had been dwindling recently. Hence his focus turned towards raising race horses, but to no great result so far.

As Robins introduced the farm, the group of them entered it. Just as they entered, some of the horses that were grazing stopped and looked at them. These horses are already familiar with human beings so after taking a quick look,

they went back to munching on their grass; but Robins clearly is staring at these majestic beasts.

“Have you guys thought of what breeds of horses you need?” At this moment. Bob turned around and asked them. In front of them are 4 large stables. Just from the appearance of the stables, the horses kept inside are clearly different.

“There are differences in horses too?” Hearing Bob’s question, Jiang Hai asked Robins in a low voice.

Jiang Hai, like almost any other ordinary citizen, have almost no understanding of horses. He has only encountered them either in novels or in games. In them, most of the horses are mainly famous in China; such as the ferghana horses, the three river horses, and the yili horses ([1](#)). If you mention any others, then you’ve clearly lost him.

“Different breeds naturally have their own specific prices. If it is those ordinary wild horses or mixed blood ones then they are for sure cheaper, but those purebloods are much more expensive.” Although Jiang Hai kept his voice down, but Bob had clearly heard him and patiently explained.

The so-called ‘wild horses’ are not really ‘wild’ horses. Although there are wild horses in North America, but there really aren’t a lot. There is also the existence of the wildlife conservation act in America which covers all wildlife includes these horses. The so called wild horses here are offsprings of those originally tamed wild horses. As for the mixed bloods, they are offsprings of wild and family horses. These horses aren’t fast nor have much strength, but they are really easy to raise. They can be used for most activities around the farm and also be ridden, hence their popularity with most family farms. Apart from these horses, there are only the expensive purebloods left.

“Of the 4 stables here, the one over there is for wild and mix blood horses, the middle one is for those marquardt horses. If it were me, these ones are more than enough for the farm. Of the 2 stables back there, the middle one is for purebloods, and the last one is for race horses. Although they haven’t won anything yet, but they are still race horses.” Feeling Jiang Hai’s curious looks, Bob continued. To be honest, by Robins’ standards, the best is those marquardts, but those wild or mixed ones aren’t bad either. Those purebloods and racehorses are

a different story as they are not of much help on the farm.

“Let us go take a look at those purebloods and racehorses.” As expected, as soon as Jiang Hai hears there are purebloods and racehorses, he completely forgot about everything else. Although he is running out of money, but there should still be enough to buy some horses.

“Racehorses and purebloods are quite different from ranch horses. These horses are all hot blooded hence they have really bad endurance; only suitable for dashing and races.” Bob brought them to the pureblood and racehorse stables upon hearing Jiang Hai’s remark. But before they went, Robins walked up beside Jiang Hai and whispered.

Hearing this, Jiang Hai is clearly stunned. Since when were there this many aspects for horses? Aren’t the better ones better than the rest? Seeing Jiang Hai’s stunned looks, Robins can’t help but laugh. From the looks of things, Jiang Hai clearly knows nothing about them.

“Horses are also separated into many categories. The so-called ranch horses are those that have lots of strength and great endurance. There are no uses for short sprinters, rather it needs to be able to run for long distances. Also, they can’t be picky on what they are fed.” Robins continues to explain, although his explanation is somewhat reserved.

In fact a good horse, when brought back, is just like inviting back a bottomless pit. Not counting the need to ride it regularly, just the money needed to feed it, groom it, and clean it everyday, is more than enough to hire someone to take care of it. Those international racehorses are all easily worth several tens if not hundreds of thousands. They are truly made out of money, and apart from entering races, they are truly elites. As they are definitely not allowed to participate in anything else.

However the horses that Robins and the others need aren’t the money suckers. Rather they require those that are able to ranch efficiently hence their attention to detail. Hearing all of this, Jiang Hai is clearly lost within all of these turns. But he already said he wanted to take a look, then he might as well as go take a look since he isn’t going to buy them anyway.

Of course Bob also knows, with Robins here, he isn’t going to be able sell this

boss much of these. Thus he directly forgoed the racehorses stable and directly brought them to the purebloods. No matter how noble these horses might sound, they all required to eat and defecate. As such, the smell within the stable is similar to the cow sheds, but only to a certain extent. Generally within the bearable range. As they entered the stable, many different horses appeared before Jiang Hai's eyes and Bob went on to introduce them all.

"These are arabian horses. A very ancient and powerful breed. It can be said that 90% of the well known horses all have some sort of blood relation with these. They are also the most awe inspiring horse breed out there. These are also the ones specifically used by the Persian Empire during their conquests." The first horses to be introduced all have a body height of around 1.5m. These horses aren't very tall, but they definitely are the prettiest here. Big clear eyes, a body full of pure white fur, and well proportioned body with no variations in color resulting in some beautiful beasts.

"These are pure bloods, they are also Britain's national horse. The fastest of all of the ones here, but also the one with the worst endurance. Practically done after running a couple kilometers. Apart from being good at racing, it can't do anything else." Behind the arabian horses are the purebloods. These horses currently dominate over 90% of the horse racing industry, and they are also the most expensive to own. In comparison to the arabian horses these are much taller, at around 1.7m. These horses can only be described as majestic. If the arabian horses are like beautiful women, then these are no doubt heros. No questions asked.

"These are hanoverian horses, great for show plays. Daring, powerful, with great jumping abilities. Truly one of a kind. But the same as before, not suitable to use for ranching."

"This here is Cecil's frankel, these are appaloosas, these are budyonny's..... (2)"

As Bob continued on with his introductions, Jiang Hai is bombarded with information. Bob's horse farm is definitely worthy to be called one of biggest horse farms in the Boston region. The breeds kept here are many and varied. Nearly all of the ones that Jiang Hai has heard of and those which he hasn't are all here. However, according to Bob all pureblood horses are the same. They are all toys for the wealthy on wall street. Compared to ranch owners like Jiang Hai,

these horses are out of their field. As their walk continues, not long had passed before the three arrived at the very back of the stable. There are still a few horses here, and they specifically perked Jiang Hai's interests.

"These horses are the favourites of Chinese individuals, no, of all Asian individuals. These are ferghana horses." Bob said smilingly as he patted the white horse beside him.

Hearing Bob's words, Jiang Hai is dumbstruck for a second there. Ferghanas? Hearing this, he can't help but closely examine the horse in front of him. However truth to be told, he doesn't really think highly of these. Because this horse really Um, isn't that beautiful. It doesn't have the gentleness like the arabians. It also doesn't have the tall and boldness of the purebloods. In short very strange. This is a breed with very short fur. Apart from its mane, it's fur everywhere else is very short; almost like those chinese shar peis that can't get their skin folded. It also has a long face. But the most strange part of it is it's straight, long and thin ears. Almost like a rabbit's ears.

"Don't tell me this is what was referred to as horse of the heavens during the ancient ages?" Seeing the rabbit like horse in front of him, a dangerous thought can't help but float into Jiang Hai's mind.

Notes

1. 汗血宝马 => ferghana horse

三合马 => 三河马 -> can't find a english translation of this species, so the direct translation

伊一梨马 => 伊犁马 -> same as above except no direct translation as well, hence the pinying

If you understand chinese further information is available here: <http://baike.baidu.com/view/33942.htm> and here:

<http://baike.baidu.com/view/117378.htm>

2. Don't ask how Frankel got here, just think of it as him paying a large sum to gain ownership.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 38: A pony and a piece

Chapter 38: A pony and a piece

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

You can find more details about the ferghana breed of horses on all search engines. The most famous legend related to this horse comes all the way from the early Han dynasty. Back then, just to obtain this breed of horses, the Han emperor launched a major campaign.

However, when compared to all the other breeds nowadays, it doesn't even make the top 10. If it wasn't for its reputation from the ancient times, it probably won't even receive this much attention. The reputation of this breed far exceeds its abilities. In all honestly, this breed is pretty much the middle of the pack. Speed mediocre, not that fast. Its size is also not very large, doesn't have a lot of power, and not very nimble. But its only area of superiority is endurance, this is also where the so called tireless fellow name comes from. However it is also out matched in this field when compared to the mongolian horses.

In short distances, this breed definitely can't out run the purebloods, it also can't out endure the mongolian horses. So it can only compete with the arabian horses, but the arabians are just that much easier to breed. Thus apart from some purebloods left in the Turkmenistan area, all the rest in the world are mixed. Due to the lack of people knowing about this breed, there isn't much attention or attraction for them. But if these horses are left under mixed blood conditions, then their power, hehe, it's better to raise them as pets than anything else.

Seeing the horse in front of him, Jiang Hai can't help but smile awkwardly. If he had the choice then he would rather choose the arabians or the purebloods than these ones. It just too awkward to ride them, and they really look too much like rabbits instead of horses.

"Alright buddy, there probably isn't any horse here that you need. Come with me and let's take a look at some of the carefully raised marquardts." Bob commented as he turn the group around and led them outside. But before they

went too far from the stable, a huge horse bolted out of nowhere. This horse really gave Jiang Hai quite the scare because of just how big it is. This horse's head is almost twice the size of all the horses within the stable.

"Hey, stop it little guy!" Seeing the scared Jiang Hai, Bob can't help but quickly restrain this 'little guy' from causing anymore troubles. Having recovered from the scare, Jiang Hai began to check out this horse. However this horse really isn't little. With a shoulder height that is half a head higher than him, and a head that can almost carry two of him, this little guy is actually a monster. Wherever he walks, he makes the ground rumble, making his presence felt; and he especially likes to walk like this.

"This is a shire horse, the most powerful horse on the planet. They're draft horses from England, able to pull upwards of 5 tonnes of stuff." Bob introduced as he petted this little guy. "I only have 3 of them here. 3 years ago, I had to go through much trouble to get them over from Europe, especially when there aren't many pure ones left. I worked hard for the last 2 years to try to breed them, but the only result I got is this little guy in front of you. Yup he is only a pony, currently a little over a year old."

When Jiang Hai looked at this horse, he's only got one feeling; this horse is freaking huge. A sudden thought also came into his mind and asked. "Bob, no offence, but is this little guy up for sale?"

"Um, what do you need this one for? Although he is easy to raise, but it can't pick up much speed due to its weight. If you use him to pull stuff around, then any tractor is more efficient than him." Upon hearing Jiang Hai's question, Bob can't help with reply with a strange look on his face.

Although all the horses here on the farm are carefully raised by him, but apart from the select few that he keeps, all the rest are up for sale. This also includes ponies. If owners of horse farms, dog farms, ranches or even fisheries give a name or want a connection with the animal they raise then they definitely would go out of business.

"No no no, I'm not going to use him for work. Rather, I'm going to ride him around for fun." Hearing the hidden meaning behind Bob's words, Jiang Hai quickly explained. But when Bob and Robins hear this, they are dumbstruck.

For fun..... Alright, clearly they both forgot about a major point about Jiang Hai. Although he isn't like those people living on Wall Street, but he is still a young billionaire. Some activities really aren't something they can understand.

"Ok, \$50,000 for him." Bob said after shaking his head to remove all unnecessary thoughts. Strictly business, this is a habit for Americans. As long as Jiang Hai can pay up, and is willing to buy, then almost everything is on the table.

"\$50,000? Sure!" Jiang Hai agreed without a thought. Originally he thought this horse would at least cost him hundreds of thousands. If it was a couple million then he really need to think about it, but only 50,000, no problem.

Seeing Jiang Hai agreeing with the price, Bob also smiled at this transaction. Although livestock owners in America don't have that little of an income, but \$50,000 is already a lot. Under normal conditions, a farm like his, would only be able to produce around \$10,000 of pure profits. Eliminating all the expenses from this horse, then what is left is more than equal to a season's profits. However it wasn't until Jiang Hai entered the second stable that he found out how much a \$50,000 horse is truly worth.

In the second stable, it is all marquardts. Black, white, spotted, brown, gray and so on, it's got all the colors here. Marquardts like these, Jiang Hai had seen before. In China, one of these cost several hundreds of thousands yuan or even millions. But in America, 3 to 5 year old mature, pure marquardts cost only \$17,000. Alright, he knows that the people in China are ripping people off, but he never thought it would be this bad.

\$17,000 per horse, really isn't that much for Jiang Hai. He also isn't going to buy those thousand dollar subpar horses, as he only wants the best. Under Robins' selection, he bought a total of 5 horses for each and everyone on the ranch. Having a horse for everyone also makes their job that much easier during tight situations.

Having paid the money for the horses, Bob called up his daughter to help with the packing. This girl is currently 16/17 years old with an above average look. 1.8 meters tall, well tanned, a pair of big blue eyes on a delicate face and a head full of blond hair. Very in line with most western beauty standards. Straight, long legs, exquisite looks, adding on that delicate white skin (even when tanned,

white people are still white), with those little freckles, it caused Jiang Hai to have lingering thoughts about a girl for the first time after moving to America.

“Hey boss, she’s pretty isn’t she. She is Bob’s little daughter, in grade 11 in Boston this year if I’m not mistaken.” Seeing Jiang Hai’s sneaky glances, Robins can’t help but add in a few tempting comments. Sadly, Jiang Hai only responded with a roll of his eyes.

Everyone enjoys looking at beautiful women, but he isn’t ready to have a relationship with anyone just yet. After all, he just got a divorce, although that marriage left him with much resentment, but it is only a 400,000 yuan transaction. Having paid back his debts, he has already officially cut all ties with her.

“Alright, done. The place is here right!” Having packed all the horses away behind Bob’s pick-up, the girl lightly walked over and asked Jiang Hai and Robins.

“Em, yup. Right there.” Seeing the address in the girl’s hands, Jiang Hai nodded. Although he hadn’t arrived here for long, but for stuff like address and things, he clearly remembers correctly. Having confirmed the address, Jiang Hai has no intention of making a move. Leaving Robins feeling lonely on the side.

“Right Robins, you told Bob to deliver the horses, then what we do now? Go back together?” Jiang Hai asked out of curiosity after having gotten onto their truck.

“No, aren’t you missing your gun license? Since we’re already out then might as well as get that done. You never know who or what you’ll meet when outside. For example some random wild beast intruding on our land. So we need some defence. The others are all fine since they have they’re own piece, but you are still missing yours.” Robins explained. Hearing this Jiang Hai was first stunned, but then nodded. He clearly knows Robins isn’t finished yet, but he raised this need awhile back.

No man does not like guns. In America, owning guns is legal, but this requires registration. Those with mental problems or those on the FBI wanted list aside, everyone else is able to possess. Jiang Hai clearly passes these requirements, but he is new to the area so it is kind of hard to get it done. He raised this topic with Bell previously, but back then Bell was busy. However Robins and the others also

heard it, so since they came out to buy horses today, then Robins' original plan was to get Jiang Hai's gun registration sorted out in Boston afterwards. Hearing this, Jiang Hai is clearly excited, he can finally have his own gun.

"Boss, you ready?" Robins asked. But before he got a reply, the gas pedal is already on the metal and the car is flying towards Boston. After roughly an hour, they arrived in north Boston. Having left the highway, they quickly arrived in front of a gun shop. Having taken a look around, Jiang Hai found the TD Garden not too far away. Of course this isn't a real garden but a sports center. Home of the northern flower, the famous Boston Celtics.

"Come on in boss, we're here!" Robins said happily after having parked the car.

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 39: Gun license

Chapter 39: Gun license

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Hey buddy, guess who I just saw?” With a kick, the doors to this underground bar busted open. A very young man walked in full of excitement and sat down in front of a full round table.

In America, stuff like cigarettes and liquor are strictly controlled. According to their laws, no one under the age of 21 is allowed to drink and smoke. If you want to buy any of these at any store, then they will ask you for ID. If you are not 21 then they won't sell you anything. This also applies to all bars and clubs in America. If a person over 21 goes and buys these for minors then they will be fined if caught.

However this is like internet cafes in China, the law is clearly there but loopholes still exist. As such in America, there are some underground bars that specialize in this area. After all most teenagers between the ages of 17 and 20 are rebellious to no ends. Smoking and drinking is clearly restricted by the government and families, but these people at the very least need to try it out. This is a country based off of freedom. Clearly the people here in this bar right now are all under aged minors, but they are all happily drinking.

“Who did you see? Who responded?” A young man asked from the table.

“Bernie, your mouth stinks just like your ass.” Someone sourly commented.

“Speaking as if you've smelled it.” This Bernie retorted back.

“Shit, stop being idiots, let Barron continue.” Seeing the two almost at breaking point, a young man wear a cowboy's hat cursed back. Hearing this, the two stopped fighting, shut their trap and went back to getting hammered.

“I saw that chick Delia.” This Barron whispered to everyone in front of him.

“Delia? I know her, obedient at home but wild as all heck at school. I heard that the speed at which she changes boyfriends is like how she changes clothes. ze ze, don't know if she's single yet.” This time another young man commented

as if in deep thought with his hand on his chin. Whereas everyone bursted out laughing. Clearly everyone here knows about this girl's rumours.

"Fk, you guys really believe them? Who's Delia's dad? Bob George, which guy has the courage to approach her? They're either afraid of the remington or got shot by it." The guy with the cowboy hat happily commented. By being a local hooligan, he is quite clear how fearsome Bob can be. No one wants to mess with this guy as he will really shoot you.

"Um, what I want to talk about isn't that. I just met her and her father who were delivering some horses. I asked them where they're headed, and found out that they are moving the horses to the Green Forest. The horses are all strong marquardts. There is also another large expensive horse in the trailer. Just the horses alone are probably worth \$100,000." Barron carefully explained what he just saw to everyone in front of them.

"\$100,000, *cough cough*, that's chump change. I heard recently Leymon gave Green Forest a total of 20,000 angus cows, worth over \$2 million. Fking chinks." Bernie replied fiercely. Clearly there is a lot of people in America who hate the rich.

"There is also the farm, worth \$280 million." The young man with the cowboy hat added in quietly.

"Oh right, Faraday. When that chinese was hiring, I heard you were there too. How is he, easy to deal with?" Upon hearing that guy's words, Barron quickly asked.

"*heng* what is he? A freaking weak ass yellow monkey. Just with some stinky money it isn't enough to be cocky in front of us." The guy with the cowboy hat replied in a clearly bad mood.

Yup, Jiang Hai knows this dude. He is precisely one of the people Robins brought over at the bar when hiring. Faraday was the one who didn't get hired and was driven out. This dude is too arrogant to try to bully Jiang Hai. Is Jiang Hai really that easy to deal with? What a joke.

"Hey, since you don't like him, want us to to help with messing with him and getting some money out of him along the way?" Barron suddenly asked smilingly. Hearing this, everyone else at the table also became interested. For

young people like them what they are lacking the most is money (1). Besides, these people here clearly don't have a stable income. If they don't want to starve and want to drink 24/7 then they need some sort of way to get an income. The idea to extort some money from this rich chinese is clearly not bad.

"Any possibility of problems along the way?" Barron asked hesitantly.

"What problems? Chinese people are well known for their lack of courage. All we have to do is mess with them a bit and there comes the money." Bernie said confidently.

There are many Chinese people in America, but they can generally be separated into 3 categories. One, non-Chinese citizen of Chinese descent. They come from bloodlines that either moved or were sold over. These people have their own influence here, really troublesome to deal with. But because they've been here for so long, they still have the yellow colored skin, but understand almost no chinese. They will say they are Americans and not Chinese because they believe to be part of America.

The second type is the skilled immigrants that moved over in recent years. These people still believe themselves to be part of China deep down, but moved over due to better opportunities.

The third type is those investment immigrants, however these people have another identity in China, and that is criminals. Or it's someone who ran off with a load of public funds. Or is some corrupted official escaping from the central authority. These people generally are of low profile and have a lots of money. However they don't dare to call the cops and don't have a public identity so they easily become the extortion targets for the local crime syndicates. Commonly referred to as ATMs; lambs with lots of money. Clearly these people believe Jiang Hai to be like this, but sadly, they are in for a major surprise.

"However he's got Robins, Burke, Philemon, Harmen and Bell with him. These people kind of troublesome to deal with." Faraday said troublingly after some thinking.

"They are our uncles and as such, I do not believe they will fire at us just for some foreigner. You only live once. It's only money, worst comes to worst, give them a cut at the end. As for Bell and Harmen, we can just ignore them." Bernie

said completely full of confidence. It's just as if Jiang Hai is their endless wallet. But how is any of this as easy as it looks? Sometimes, thinking too lightly of something is really a terrible idea.

"Ahchoo....." Just at this moment in Boston, Jiang Hai felt his nose itch and sneezed.

"What's wrong Boss? A cold?" Seeing Jiang Hai sneeze, Robins asked.

"No nothing, probably pollen or something." Jiang Hai replied as he rubbed his nose. Ever since he got this overpowered body, he can be said to be the healthiest person in the world. Although that is kind of over the top, but at least under normal conditions he should be cold free. His sneeze was probably because he smelled something he shouldn't have or someone is reminiscing about him. Shaking his head, Jiang Hai entered the gun shop in front of him.

Gun shops in America, from their outer appearance are just like any small supermarkets in China. The only difference here, is that they sell guns instead of grocery. Upon entering, Jiang Hai is clearly caught off guard by the ferocity of the shop. In front of him, there are guns everywhere. Some in the glass display counter, some on the walls, and some on the shelves. Handguns are all kept in the counter while other types of guns are hung up on the walls. Jiang Hai clearly recognized a portion of them, for example, M16s, Ak47s, but the majority of them is unknown to him. Such as the Israeli galil, Germany's G3 which seriously looks like an AK. There is also CT's 44 from Counter Strike, otherwise known as the AUG, are all here.

However, compared to these rifles, most of the guns on display are of 3 major types. One of them is the double barrel shotgun, where you have to pop open the barrel itself to reload. Then there is the bolt action and semiautomatic rifles. Finally there is whole section of shotguns. Small build, but full of killing potential. Apart from all of this are the bullets stockpiled in front of him like waterfalls. Upon seeing all of these, the first thought that comes to Jiang Hai's mind is 'no wonder there are so many shootings in America', is there really no problem by doing things like this? (2)

Just as Jiang Hai's eyes were about to be overloaded, a young man wearing a red coat walked over from the counter full of smiles and asked. "Is there

anything I can help you with today?”

“Oh, I’m here to get a gun license.” Jiang Hai replied slowly.

Notes

1. Kai: And brains?

2. Kai: He means having a gun shop, or having such a variety, im guessing. But still, this does remind me of saints row xD

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 40: Dazzled

Chapter 40: Dazzled

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Alright, please come this way for the form. I’m also going to need your IDs.” The young man brought Jiang Hai to the counter and pulled out some paperwork for him to fill as well as asking for IDs.

Normally, the most commonly used type of ID in America is the driver’s license. However, since Jiang Hai doesn’t have an American licence right now, he can only present the the green card as his ID. Having examined Jiang Hai’s green card, he picked up the phone for confirmation, received \$500 for the license and registration fees and the completed form. Jiang Hai was surprised that this was all he had to do.

Getting a gun license in America is actually pretty easy. All you need is a confirmation from the FBI saying that you are an American citizen, a permanent resident, or a green card holder, a clear history and without any mental disorder. For the rich like Jiang Hai, who is a holder of the black centurion, they have special services for stuff like these and everything would be sorted out for them. However Jiang Hai hasn’t touched these stuff yet and Robins and the others don’t understand so it came down to the basic applications. However the application process went without a hitch, he completed the form, registered in the computer database and everything is done.

Lastly comes the buying part of the process. Of course there are also restrictions here as well. For one, Jiang Hai can’t buy automatics. Although ordinary citizens have the right to bear arms, but they are all semiautomatics. By law, anybody over the age of 18 can own rifles, but you need to be at least 21 before you can own handguns. Other restrictions also apply.

Jiang Hai only bought the basic gun license. This license allows you to own guns, but normally you must store them unloaded at home. You can also store it in the trunk of the car, but then the gun must be cased and in a hard to reach place. The gun must also be empty and bullets stored separately. If you want to

carry then you must apply for the license to carry, but this requires you receive special police training first. This is very troublesome to get, and Jiang Hai doesn't have the need to carry his guns everywhere.

Originally apart from the license to carry there is also a license to carry hidden weapons. However, due to an increase in shootings in recent years, most state government have stopped issuing these licenses.

It was a good thing that Jiang Hai had settled in Boston, if he chose to settle in the neighboring New York, where gun control is almost on par with California, then he can have fun waiting for his applications to come through. However in Boston, everything is pretty much done after filling out the state forms, so as soon as the young man finished processing the forms he began to introduce all kinds of guns to Jiang Hai.

In America buying guns is very easy. Not only can you buy them online, there are also specialized stores that sell them. Like the store they are in right now. They have almost every type of gun, such as the hunting rifles, assault rifle, pistol and so on. Nearly everything that has hit the market is here. Of course stuff like sniper rifles and machine guns is also available, but Jiang Hai has no need for them. As a side note, the prices for these guns is completely different from what Jiang Hai originally thought. It's not that it's too expensive, rather it's way too cheap.

In all specialized gun stores, all guns are separately priced from a couple hundred to a few thousand. For example the 9mm competition guns from SIG Sauer cost \$929, the .45 M1911 cost \$1015 and the P238 for \$689. The famously well known Glock cost almost nothing. The Glock 19, 22 and 27 model only cost \$429, Glock .45 models cost \$499, and the luger 380 only cost \$349.

Of course you can't just buy the gun and bullets since you'll be hunted down by the police, so you also need to other stuff as well. Such as gun cases, gun covers, additional magazines, care kits and so on. However the whole set is actually pretty cheap. A Smith & Wesson M&P cost \$549, but the whole set, which includes a gun case, a gun sleeve, 2 magazines and a cleaning kit, costs \$649, only \$100 more.

Of course, apart from these, there are also lots of personalization options

available. Such as different types of grips; just think about it, now any girl can change the gun's grip to match her bag, heels and so on ([1](#)). Silencers are also up for sale, but the cost is kind of expensive now, ranging from \$700 to more than \$6000. The ones for pistols are pretty cheap in comparison to the ones for rifles. However silencers for hunting rifles are just too much.

"If you have any interest in any of these, we have a small shooting range in the back where you can try it out. Of course the price of the bullets are not included, but it's pretty cheap." Seeing the dazzled look Jiang Hai is having, this attendant stated.

"Yo Robins, any suggestions?" After some hesitation, Jiang Hai turned to Robins for his advice.

"To be honest it isn't that hard to pick, the main thing is the caliber of the guns. All you need to do is pick a caliber and choose guns from there. Performance and such are all pretty much the same. I suggest you to get two guns. A pistol for personal defence and a hunting rifle, well a semiautomatic assault rifle also works." Robins replied.

Hearing Robins' suggestion, Jiang Hai thought for a bit before tell the attendant: "Show me the most powerful guns. I'm preparing to buy a pistol, a hunting rifle and an assault rifle."

"The most powerful?" Seeing Jiang Hai's weak ass frame, the attendant is clearly stunned and in doubt. The more powerful the gun, the bigger the recoil. Can Jiang Hai, with that weak ass looking build, really hold up?

"Just bring them out." Seeing the doubting looks the attendant is having, Jiang Hai said affirmatively.

Hearing what Jiang Hai said and the old saying, the customer is always right, the attendant went to retrieve some guns. The first batch he brought back were mainly revolvers. Yes, compared to ordinary guns, revolvers are more powerful, but Jiang Hai has no interest in them.

"Put away the revolvers and tell me about the rest." Jiang Hai said.

"Oh sure. This is a Beretta 92F, currently United States Army's service pistol. Low rate of misfire, somewhat powerful with 9mm bullets." The attendant

introduced in gun in Jiang Hai's hands. In Jiang Hai's opinion, this gun is pretty good, fully silver, and a service pistol for the United States Army.

"These are the Colt 2000 and M1911. I'm not going into details with the M1911 as it is one of the best pistols during WWII. The 2000 is an upgrade of the 1911 but also uses 9mm bullets but is a bit more ugly." The Colt 2000 is definitely a bit ugly and somewhat out of date. However this isn't the reason why it lost to Beretta, it's pretty much the same with the 1911.

"This is Germany's .45 caliber P229. It's power is not a problem. Within 30 meters and killing a wild hog is not a problem. Cheap, but ugly."

"This is China's QSZ, good looks, powerful, but the bullets are kind of expensive. Due to different bullet models, thus the import fee for these bullets are relatively expensive."

Jiang Hai can't believe this store even has Chinese guns. Originally he was set on buying this, but upon hearing the bullets need to be imported, that idea was discarded. After the attendant also introduced America's luger, Germany's HK and Czech's CZ. To be honest, Jiang Hai is somewhat displeased. From the beginning, he wasn't prepared to buy these.

Seeing the attendant having finished with his introductions, Jiang Hai straight asked: "Deagle? Got any?"

"Um, yes." The attendant is clearly stunned and looked towards Robins for help.

"Desert eagles are famous but it's recoil is just too big, ok to use for hunting, but not so good for protection purposes." Robins explained.

In fact, desert eagles. in most gun enthusiasts' eyes. Is not a good gun at all. This gun is well known mainly due to movies and games. However real gun enthusiasts all know that this gun is the same as the Smith and Wesson M500. All show guns. Powerful but it's recoil is just too big. How do you use them under these conditions? Point at the feet and hope to shoot someone's head? That's just hoping for too much.

"No problem, I just want to try it out. Give me the more powerful here for a test." Jiang Hai said as he shook his head. All he wants to do is try it out. Coming

to a gun shop for a first time and not even touch the famous deagle is out of the question.

“Um alright.... This counter here contains only desert eagles. The normal ones use .357, a more powerful version uses .44 and the most powerful uses .50. However this gun’s recoil is beyond imagination. Which one you want?” Seeing Jiang Hai’s perseverance, the attendant can only satisfy his wishes. He already said what needs to be said, everything else rests with Jiang Hai.

“How about that one?” Seeing the guns displayed in the counter, Jiang Hai’s eyes suddenly lit up as he pointed to the biggest gun in the case.

“Um, this.....” Noticing which gun was being pointed at, the attendant is clearly dumbstruck and sacred.

Notes

1. Kai: Does this grip make me look fat?

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 41: Asian supermarket

Chapter 41: Asian supermarket

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Um, this is also a deagle, .50 caliber, but special edition.” The attendant replied.

A normal .50 caliber desert eagle has a full body length of 270mm, with a barrel length of 250mm. However this special versions barrel is extended, almost like those super large pistols in films. That awe-inspiring feeling when you hold it is incomprehensible. Of course, with increased barrel length comes increased muzzle velocity, which leads to extra recoil; but Jiang Hai pays it no mind.

“Yes, now let me try this baby out in the back!” Jiang Hai said full of excitement as he held the gun in his hands.

“Uhhhh, alright.....” Seeing Jiang Hai’s excitement, the attendant nodded after some hesitation, he can always wear some protective gear if needed.

However Jiang Hai clearly has no interest in continuing this line of conversation, as having finished selecting his pistol, he went on to pick out his rifle. There are two major types here, the assault rifle such as the legendary M16, AUG, AK and so in. But the only ones sold here are the semi automatic ones, where each shot requires a separate press of the trigger. The other type is the sniper rifle, stuff like the AWP and Barrettes. However the clip size of all rifles have been restricted by the government to contain only 5 bullets. Of course 30 bullet magazines also exist on the black market, but the price of those are even more expensive than guns.

As such, Jiang Hai doesn’t have much interest in these guns. After some help from Robins, he settled with a remington M870P shotgun. This gun has a specific advantage as it can be used as a hunting gun with deer slugs. Apart from this, Jiang Hai also selected an Austrian Steyr AUG. Although it is somewhat expensive, it can function as a semi sniper rifle with its built in scope. These guns are ones that meet Jiang Hai’s requirements, he can change them anytime if he finds anything feels out of place during test shooting.

In America, most gun stores have their own shooting range in the back. However you still have to pay to use it; \$2 for target sheets, 100 pistol rounds for \$30, \$10 to \$20 for 100 rifle rounds though you can change guns anytime. Apart from these, you also need to rent the target slot. The store they are in right now is somewhat expensive with \$30 per hour, in total with tips and everything, it comes down to \$100 to test out the guns.

This is the first time Jiang Hai has ever fired any weapon, so first on the list is the AUG. As to not lose too much face by shooting wide, he decided to aim with the built in scope. Under the attendant's careful instructions, he took at a very basic stance and aimed.

"Pay attention when you fire, this gun's recoil is kind of big....."

Peng peng peng peng peng Before the attendant finished speaking, Jiang Hai had already fired.

In a flash these bullets were already on their way towards the target. Under everyone's astonishment, all 5 shots hit the target and left 5 separate marks. However these marks are made up of 3 8-rings and 2 7-rings, not even a single 9 ring.

"Uh, I'm so bad at this." Said Jiang Hai as he put down the gun. Yet he has no clue how much of a scare he just gave everyone.

The attendant and Robins were both observing Jiang Hai when he fired. Due to the large recoil from the AUG, if something had happened to him, then that is another load of problems. However, none of them would've thought that the large recoil from the AUG did not affect him at all.

Seeing this, Robins can't help but remember the time when they first went to buy groceries. It would seem that Jiang Hai's strength is beyond normal understanding. Under that skinny ass frame lay a sleeping beast.

Having tried the AUG, Jiang Hai turned his attention to the remington. This gun is not like a rifle with it's point and shoot style, rather it's more like a blast; each shot covers a wide area. This type of gun is good when hunting, but it's too far off to be used for regular use. It's just like what Robins had previously said, it doesn't matter if the gun has any use, just have it ready just in case.

Finally it is the special edition deagle's turn. The recoil of this .50 caliber gun is really no joke. As such, the attendant will not let him try it without some protection. Hence with protection, Jiang Hai fired the gun to find the recoil to be 2 times higher than that of the AUG, but still within acceptable range. So he removed all the protection and continued. With a single handed he was not very accurate, and was a bit better with both hands, but it's power is really uncomparable with the AUG.

Jiang Hai is actually pretty satisfied with this outcome. Thus he finally settled one these 3 guns, their kits, and enough bullets to last a while. In total, everything came down to roughly \$20,000, and when they left they threw it all in the back of the 750.

"Alright let's head back." Robins said as they left the gun store.

Jiang Hai was about to agree with this, but he suddenly saw the shop in front of the gun store. This store is really a small convenience store but it's different than most convenience stores due to the 4 chinese characters on it's name board. Zhang's family store.

"Chinese store?" Jiang Hai muttered stunned as he slowed down his pace.

"Hey Hai, what's up?" Robins who has already gotten on the car asked with curiosity.

"Oh, I'm gonna go buy some things." Jiang Hai replied as he walk towards that store.

"Welcome, feel free to look around." As soon as he entered, a voice sounded from the side. Hearing this broken english, Jiang Hai turned around and saw a young female cashier. From the looks, this girl seems to be of asian descent. Returning her greetings with a nod, Jiang Hai continued in and was surprised by all the stuff here.

"Lao gan ma. Spicy garlic sauce. Black bean sauce. Sweet bean sauce. This is really a small chinese supermarket. There is even some vegetables here, oh even northeastern rice as well. Em, that smell" Jiang Hai muttered as he shopping.

There really is a lot of stuff here, on top of that, most of the stuff are all authentic imports. After being here for almost a month, Jiang Hai is somewhat

sick of eating sweet and sour stuff day in and day out. Sometimes he really wanted to have some mixed noodles, old Beijing style, but he has no clue how to make the sauce. It's not like you can replace it with tomato sauce and hope it tastes authentic.

These were his thoughts in the morning, but now it turned into reality; this is really something to be happy about. Although the market has almost everything any chinese person might ask for, but the prices here were higher than expected. Almost every bottle here is worth a box back in China, but you can't actually mail these stuff over. Hence without much thinking, Jiang Hai took a basket and filled it up with everything he needs. First 2 bottles of Lao gan ma, then 4 bottles of spicy garlic sauce, 4 bottles of black bean sauce, some hard to find soy sauce, vinegar and also a 5kg bag of good quality rice.

Originally, Northeast China didn't produce rice, but beans and sorghum. However this all changed with the occupation by the Japanese Empire. They brought over rice and forced the people to farm them. After they lost and left, the northeast people kept the habit of farming rice. Due to the bitter coldness in winter, the ground here is not as overused as some areas in China. The soil here is fertile to the point where you can almost squeeze out oil from it. As a result, the rice there has high yields and a great taste. Originally, there were two regions that produced rice in the northeast, Liao province and Heilong province; but due to high levels of pollution in Liao province, Heilong province's rice quickly overtook the sector of the market.

Among them is one of the best tasting rice in the world, it's also what most people in Heilong province eat, the paddy flower rice. This type of rice is particularly fragrant with a unique texture and hence is extraordinarily delicious. This type of rice costs only 3 to 4 yuan a catty in Heilong province, but once transported south, it's prices skyrocket. In Sichuan province this rice costs around 80 yuan for a 5 kg bag. If we go even further south, then it's not rare to find a dozen yuan for a catty of this.

In America, the rice is also expensive. A 5 kg sack of rice cost \$110. This isn't selling rice anymore, but gold. This stuff is just too expensive. However Jiang Hai still bought a bag. Having purchased the rice and all the condiments, he next went to the vegetable section. To be fair most of the vegetables can also be

bought in America, with the exception of some unusual ones. For example zhu sun mushroom, lion's mane fungus, chinese yam and the likes are almost non existent in most western supermarkets.

Jiang Hai likes to eat meat, so he doesn't care much about normal vegetables. However when he sees stuff like matsutake, his mouth can't help but water. This type of mushroom is a specialty in Northeast China. They require special growing conditions, so they can't be farmed, but only harvested from the wild.

Jiang Hai remembered when he was little, he didn't like to eat mushrooms. But one time his grandparents got sick so he mom left to take care of them. As a result he was left with his dad at home. His dad back then cooked up some matsutake to eat and from then on he feel in love with all kinds of mushrooms.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 42: Chickens

Chapter 42: Chickens

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

These mushrooms were pretty expensive when Jiang Hai was little. As far as he can remember, back then a catty of pork cost 4 yuan and a bit, but this type of mushrooms costed nearly 5 yuan a catty. So he had always tried to get his hands on them every year. However it really has been a long time since he has had any, because these mushrooms are seasonal vegetables as it appears in markets during july to august. They also have some ridiculous growing needs; they only grow in mountain regions where temperatures reach 32°C and humidity levels needs to reach 85% and beyond.

As more people start to demand better quality food, the prices of these amazingly tasting mushrooms increased nonstop. Adding on the fact that these mushrooms have anti cancer and diabetes properties, with their originally high prices and the fact that they can't be farmed, it's no wonder that their prices skyrocket each year. Jiang Hai hasn't had these mushrooms in a long time, now that they have appeared in front of him, his mouth is really watering. Although they were dried, and had a ridiculous price tag, Jiang Hai still decided to empty the shop of them.

"Young man, why you buying so much mushrooms?" Just as Jiang Hai was emptying the market of the mushrooms, an old man came over full of curiosity and asked.

"Old man, you're also chinese?" Hearing this old man's pure mandarin, Jiang Hai is in quite the shock.

"No shit, those who came here to shop, 99% are chinese." The old man explained.

"Hehe that's true, but old man, this type mushrooms is called matsutake. A very delicious type of wild mushroom." Jiang Hai introduced.

"Oh? I've had these mushrooms before. Pretty good, but then you get

diarrhea.” The old man replied as he tried to remember his past experiences with these mushrooms.

“Well of course, you need to peel off the top layer of skin before eating it.” Jiang Hai continued. Hearing this, the old man can be clearly seen debating whether to try it out or not later.

After picking up all the mushrooms, Jiang Hai thought about it and picked out a couple chinese yams to snack on later. When he picked out everything and was about to pay, the old man called out. “Young man, seeing you buy all this sauce, rice and mushrooms, you are probably from the northeast. This store also has some small ben chickens, want some?”

“Ben chickens? Wait what? There are ben chickens in America?” The so called ben chicken are just free-ranged chickens, but not those commercialized ones. These chickens basically are never fed, rather all the food they eat are self gathered from the farm. Because these chickens have a very barren diet thus there is very little meat, and it’s meat is also very tough, without much fat and very tasty. Although Jiang Hai doesn’t like chicken, but after only having factory chicken for so long, it’s no wonder he is missing the flavor of free ranged chickens.

“Haha, these are just chicks. This owner of this store specifically imported some from china and raised them here in America. So?” The old man said.

“Oh? Sure, let’s see them.” Hearing this, Jiang Hai can’t help but be excited. If they really were chicken breeds from China and free ranged here, then they probably would taste great.

Americans love chicken, that is a given, but most of those were factory raised and from poor breeds. The meat itself isn’t that great, but just good enough to satisfy people’s basic hunger. As such, most Americans only eat these during holidays. Otherwise the chicken they eat generally are all big and fat factory raised ones.

As Jiang Hai chatted with the old man, they arrived at the produce section of the store. Here, not only do they sell seafood and beef, but they also sell river fish. However, most Americans won’t eat these river fishes, hence there are a lot of big wild fish in their river system. Due to invasive species, and not having

enough people catch them, the situation continues to be disastrous.

Sadly Jiang Hai is different from most Americans. During these couple of days, he has grown tired of eating seafood every meal and is craving some river fish. By what Robins told him before, their river systems here are full of invasive fish that almost no one touches. So there is no need to buy them, as he can just easily fish for them.

Therefore, Jiang Hai just took a glance at the fish section and went to the part of the store that handles chicken. With a single look, Jiang Hai can tell that the chicken sold here is not of the breed Americans commercialized. This breed has many colors and appears to be fully matured, but it only weighs around 3 catties or so.

“Not bad. I’ll take a few.” Seeing these chickens, Jiang Hai nodded, picked 3 of them and a carton of eggs. He doesn’t have much to buy, even if he forgot something, he can always come back as the store isn’t far from where he lives. According to his phone call a couple of days ago, his driver’s license will be ready in a couple of days so he can then come whenever he wants. Having picked out everything he currently needs, Jiang Hai went to the cashier with that pile of stuff. This stuff’s quality can be guaranteed, but are seriously expensive. In total every thing cost him over \$300, but he still went ahead and bought them.

“Old man, you are not buying anything?” Having paid for everything, Jiang Hai can’t help but ask the old man since only he had been shopping after this whole time.

“Me? My son owns this store, so what is there to buy?” Hearing this, Jiang Hai nearly went berserk. Okay, this is clearly false advertising, but there isn’t much to say about it. It’s just one is looking to buy and the other is looking to sell. Nothing more, nothing less. So Jiang Hai can only let out a sigh and carry the stuff out.

“Hey boss, what’s all these stuff you bought?” Seeing the young boss in front of him, Robins couldn’t hold in his curiosity and asked. When his boss left he had nothing in his hands, but now that he is back, he brought a huge pile of stuff with him.

“Nothing really, just some basics from home. I can’t always live off of your

western meals, so I bought some stuff to cook with.” Jiang Hai happily explained.

“If you really want to eat, you could always go to the chinese restaurants in town. Their stuff is actually pretty good.” Robins continued.

Hearing this, Jiang Hai can only shake his head and disagree. Having been here for this long, there is no way he hasn't tried them. But the stuff there really is just to earn profits and nothing else. As such the so called chinese food here aren't authentic chinese food, rather they are westernized chinese food. The chinese restaurant he went to in Winthrop uses ketchup in almost everything. So the stuff there really can't be called chinese food.

“You don't understand. You'll understand once I've made some. Alright let's go.” Jiang Hai gave up explaining and commanded.

Hearing what Jiang Hai had to say, Robins scratched his head since he really doesn't understand. But he needs to follow what Jiang Hai says since he is still the boss. With a quick hop, skip, and a jump, the truck let out a loud roar and sped off towards the estate.

It took over an hour to reach Boston from their estate, but the return trip was much faster as there is no need to slow down and change lanes. After about an hour, they've already arrived in front of the estate. At the moment, Bob is there with Burke examining the current conditions of the horses. The ones Robins choose clearly had no problems, but were reinspected just in case something happened on the way here.

“These horses are great, right?” As the car stopped beside Burke, Jiang Hai jumped down and asked.

“Boss, no problem with them.” Burke replied. Old Bob's horses are quite famous around here. There shouldn't be any problems with them because if there were, Bob's farm wouldn't be in business for so long.

“Em, that's good to hear. You can go ahead and put them away. That big one is mine, you guys can sort out the rest!” Hearing Burke's reply, Jiang Hai greeted Bob and continued on into the estate with Robins.

Having parked the car in the estate, Jiang Hai first put away the guns and bullets separately in one of his many empty closets. Then headed downstairs to

put away all the food he bought in the fridge. Finally just when he carried the chickens inside, the two hounds already came over hoping to be fed.

“Hey hey hey, these are mine, not yours.” Seeing the greedy looks the hounds were having, Jiang Hai yelled and kicked them away.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 43: River fish

Chapter 43: River fish

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“*Wuuu wuuu...*” Hearing what Jiang Hai said, Po can’t help but let out depressing cries and stare at him with puppy eyes. On the other hand, Yun only stared at Jiang Hai for a bit before turning and leaving. When Yun left, Po didn’t stay any longer also leaving with complete reluctance.

“Boss, are you going to eat these chicks or raise them?” At this point Robins came out of the parked car and asked about the 3 chicken cages in Jiang Hai’s hands.

In China, chicken this big is definitely for eating. But in America, 1.5lb chickens can’t even be considered chickens, they’re more like chicks, as factory raised chickens need to be at least 3 to 4 lbs before they hit the market. Under normal conditions, factory breeds take roughly 6 months or 24 weeks before they reach at least 3 lbs. With superior technology and crossbreeding in America, this growth period is shortened and the chicken’s output is also increased. Else why do you think American burgers are so cheap. Therefore this is why they view 1.5lb chickens as inedible.

“Of course it’s to eat.” Jiang Hai replied without even thinking.

“But they’re this small... Alright boss, do you want to slaughter them now?” Although it kind of feels bad to kill them at the moment, but if this is what the boss wants, then to cowboys, stuff like slaughtering chickens, cows, lambs and such are of course part of their job.

“Now, ummm, not right now.” After some thought, Jiang Hai replied. Originally, he didn’t plan on buying these chickens. If it wasn’t for the old man’s advertising, he wouldn’t even bother to buy them. Now that he bought them, butchering is easy but he has no clue how to cook them.

“Then let’s raise them for now. This tiny, they probably won’t have much meat anyways.” Hearing the hesitation in Jiang Hai’s reply, Robins probably thought

that Jiang Hai want the chickens to grow bigger before killing them. However, if he finds out that this type of chicken can only grow this big, the shock he would have is unimaginable.

Since they are going to raise them, they need a chicken coop. This task goes to the handymen on the estate. According to Robins, to create a simple chicken coop all you need is some wooden planks to create a small hut then wall it off with fishing net and your done. Like this, not is it nearly impossible for the chickens to escape, it is also extremely easy to feed them. Due to the nearby forest, there is no need to buy any lumber, so to create a chicken coop is actually really easy.

“Hey boss, the horses you bought are just too amazing. Although the care cost of these mature marquardts are through the roof, but you bought 6 of them. You are just simply awesome!” At this moment, Philemon came over smiling. He was with Burke at the stables taking care of the new horses. From now on, they not only need to take care of the cow shed, they also need to take care of the horses. These mature horses are much simpler to take care of than the ponies, a couple of days is more than enough them to adapt, just in time for when the cows can be let out.

“That’s for sure. Our boss is the most generous one I have ever met.” Robins followed. Although Jiang Hai knows that they are flattering him, but it is just too pleasing to hear. After all, before he had struck rich, there was only him flattering others and no one flattering him.

“Right boss, my wife told me to ask you what you want to eat. Is it seared steak, seared fish, stewed beef or stewed lamb. And are you fine with bread as the starch of the meal?” Seeing Jiang Hai preparing to leave, Philemon suddenly remembered his purpose here and asked. However, upon hearing that it’s about what’s for dinner, Jiang Hai suddenly appeared flustered. Although he really isn’t against these, but he also can’t take eating these day in and day out.

“Tell her that I’m gonna try something new today, so she doesn’t need to cook for me tonight.” Jiang Hai replied after some thinking. Since when was chinese food ever simple to make? So Jiang Hai just gave a very basic answer.

“Um, then what do you want to eat boss?” Hearing Jiang Hai wanting to

change the menu, Philemon is clearly stunned.

“No, no, no. No need to tell her, it’s fine. The stuff I want to eat, you guys don’t know how to make since they’re chinese regional dishes.” Jiang Hai said as he shook his head. He has no wishes for Mrs. Turner to try cooking those modified chinese dishes. It’s much better for him to experiment alone. Of course, this is also to broaden his repertoire of skills; as he definitely needs to know how to adapt living here in America.

“Oh, so it’s like this. Then do what ingredients do you need? I’ll help you find them.” Hearing that Jiang Hai is looking to make some home cooking, Philemon can’t help be excited and ask to help out.

“No need, I just need some river fish and it’s not like you guys will eat them. Anyway since you are already here, then help get the chicken coop set up.” Hearing Jiang Hai is looking for river fish, both Robins and Philemon are someone taken back then became embarrassed.

They obviously heard that chinese people love to eat river fish, but to them, river fish isn’t that interesting to eat. One, they have too many bones, and most Americans can’t get used to it. Two, there is an earthy smell which emanates from those river fishes. Although some people liked to eat stuff with specific smells, but this earthy smell is not something others can get accustomed to. Finally, three, the river systems in America were once extremely polluted, although with some interference from the government, the situation became somewhat better, people were still educated by their elders to believe that the fishes in the river system are still contaminated. As such, not many people are willing to try them, even with reports from the government saying that they are healthy to eat.

On the other hand, there are rumors that at the east coast people are harvesting river fishes and sending them to China for sale. In China, wild fish are very popular. Sadly, no matter how wild a fish is, it’s not worth much when dead. In Jiang Hai’s point of view, all America has to do to take care of it’s disastrous river systems is to let in some chinese tourists, then set up some cottages and such for rent and the problem is pretty much solved. If these tourists are also allowed to catch and cook them, then within a year, the great lakes will probably be fishless, don’t even mention the asian carp problem, and they also can earn a

bunch from this. Of course, problems between countries weren't that easy to fix. If Jiang Hai's idea is really adopted then he definitely wouldn't be stuck here doing nothing.

Although they have no interest in river fish, the two definitely are good handyman. With Jiang Hai's help, a simple chicken coop is built in under an hour. They then cast on those broken fishing nets and the coop is finished. When Jiang Hai let the 3 chickens out inside the coop, they ran out with lightning speed and started to size up their new surroundings. However a chicken's brain is really limited, so under no time, they are out searching for food.

As for Jiang Hai, he rode an ATV with his fishing rod and left the estate. Although he is terrible at sea fishing, but he still has confidence in his fresh water fishing skills.

Boston is the biggest city in the New England region, it is also one of England's first colonial cities in America. The reason why the english settled here is precisely because of the fresh water sources within the region. There is Massachusetts bay to the west which is connected to the Atlantic ocean. The land is not only beside the ocean, but it is full of fresh water sources.

There are only two major rivers, the Charles river and the Chelsea creek. However, the Charles river isn't really that long. A total length of 192 km, that is like a hour and a half long trip by car. There are also a lot of other streams and creeks around, but they are just too small to be named and displayed on google maps. If you are here in person, then you will find that these are complex river systems.

Sadly, river systems in America are experiencing their toughest challenge yet. This challenge is none other than the invasion of the asian carp. The so called asian carp is not just one specific carp breed, but the whole species. Such as the silver carp, bighead carp, crucian carp, black fish and so on.

Although Jiang Hai is terrible at sea fishing, but he can be considered half a professional fishermen when fishing in freshwater bodies. After all, you are allowed to fish in all rivers in China, and some people can get pretty good catches there, so you can imagine their skills.

A 30 minute walk or 10 minute ATV ride to the north of Jiang Hai's estate is a

local river. Jiang Hai has been here previously and can confirm that the river is full of fish. He also has a lot of thoughts for these, but sea fishing is just that much more interesting. However, upon remembering how badly he sucked at it and what he wants to make for dinner, he quickly went to business. As the boss here, he really can't go back empty handed in something he is so confident in.

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 44: Threatened

Chapter 44: Threatened

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Rod, line, hook, float, bait. Hum, let’s just dig up some worms when I’m there. They probably also like to eat those. Also a chair, fish cage, net, cooler. En, these are more than enough.” To be fair, those who don’t fish, don’t know how tedious fishing is. It’s somewhat better when fishing in freshwater bodies, but it is so much more troublesome when sea fishing.

Although Jiang Hai doesn’t know how to fish in the sea before fishing with Robins earlier, but now that there is no one available to give him pointers, he has no incentives to go sea fishing. If he comes back empty handed, then that is just too much of a disappointment. Hence he is here fishing beside a river, doing something he knows.

Normally when river fishing, the best option is to use a hand rod. The so called hand rods are just 3 to 8 meter long fishing rods made out of carbon fiber or fiberglass without a wheel.

The ones that Jiang Hai used before are made out of fiberglass. These rods are very very heavy, extremely easy to break, but super tough. Their toughness also earned them a nickname within the community; The battle rod. Of course the name doesn’t apply to fishing, but to street fights as these rod are even better than baseball bats.

To be honest, this rod, is only used by the fishing newbies. As for why Jiang Hai used these rods before, it is not because he is a beginner, but rather it is because they are cheap as heck. A 5.4 meter long rod only cost 25 Yuan. It just suited him perfectly. Moreover, there aren’t any big fish left in the rivers of Heilong province, so these rods are more than enough.

Now that he has the money, he specifically ordered a high end rod for times like this. This time, he brought his specially designed 11 meter long carbon fiber rod with him. Add a thickest line and a large hook and you have the basics for fishing. After packing everything onto an ATV, he left the estate in search of a

good fishing spot in the nearby delta.

In the Boston region, due to low water flow rates there aren't any major rivers or rapids. Of course, this excludes periods of heavy rainfall, storms, hurricanes and blizzards.

After leaving the estate for roughly just 5 minutes, a river system appeared in front of Jiang Hai. After half an hour of careful examination, he finally found a spot that is clean, with minimal waves, and has low levels of vegetation coverage. Having found the perfect spot, Jiang Hai parked the vehicle and started to set everything up.

The first thing he did upon arrival is start to dig around with a small shovel. In America, there is no real interest in finding worms as no one really needs them. As such, these wild worms are especially long, thick, abundant, and looks like some small monster. However Jiang Hai is pretty fond of these since they are one of the best kind of baits out there. Not too long passed before he dug up half a plate of worms. Without the need to do much, apart from clearing off some of the soil, they are attached onto the hooks and ready for use. After having prepared everything, with a flick of his wrist, the hook flies out and lands in the middle of the river, waiting to be bitten.

"Ahhh, this is still the best. Although sea fishing is fun and all, but it is seriously too complicated." Having confirmed the floats are working, Jiang Hai slowly sat down and said to himself.

Letting out a long sigh, he put down the rod and began to enjoy the surrounding clean environment. In fact, the most satisfactory part of America is without a doubt the air here. When compared to the air quality of China's countryside, it is miles ahead. The only places where you can find this pristine, no pollution feeling in China is in those deep forests.

Bang bang bamg Just as Jiang Hai is enjoy this beautiful nature, his rod suddenly flew out. If it wasn't for his quick reactions then he probably would've lost the fish and the rod. However, there is no way he is giving it any chance. As soon as he held the rod tightly and pulled it back, he was in for a shock.

Because the scene of him lifting up the rod didn't happen. Rather the rod didn't have any sign of being lifted up. Instead it began to bend down. You have

to know that this is not a sea fishing rod with it's flexibility, rather this is a stiff hand pole and it is extremely easy to break. This scare made him to quickly loosen his grip and give it a quick check. He soon confirmed that a fish is really on the hook since the line is moving, but is really hard to retrieve.

"This can't be possible, how is there such big fish here?" As he reeled in the fish, Jiang Hai muttered his disbelief.

According to reason, even 3 catty worth of sea weed won't bend the rod like this. There is only the possibility of large fishes in the area. As he suppressed his curiosity, he slowly continued reeling. With extensive experience in situations like this and the necessary strength, he slowly retrieved the line and a shadow of large fish appeared in the water.

"This is a carp? Shit, what is this size?" Seeing how big the fish is, Jiang Hai is really in stunned. Since in front him is the shadow of a very large carp. This particular one is almost a meter long, very broad, and with a body full of a kid's fist size scales.

Carps are very different from other types of fishes. Other fish species' scale count scale with their size. The bigger they are the more scales they have. However carps are some what different. No matter their size, under normal conditions, they only have 36 scales from head to tail. However these scales increases with their size, the bigger they are, the bigger the scale and vice versa. As for the reason why these fishes are called carps; it is because of the cross shaped grain and the smaller black dot on each piece of scales.

Upon seeing the size of this carp, Jiang Hai's eye lit up in excitement and commented: "just this fish alone is more than enough for me to eat."

His mouth was also watering. Under the encouragement of his growing hunger, he quickly pulled this huge crap out of the water and threw it on the land. With a quick cast of the nets, this fish is finally secured with no chance to escape. However when this carp hit land, it's wild side surfaced. These carps have no natural predators in America, hence their wildness once out of water. Upon landing on the ground, it began to flip-flop around non-stop, trying to get back into the river. Fortunately Jiang Hai is quick with his hands and kicked it much further inland.

“Sweet this one is just perfect!” Being kicked but the still hopping around, Jiang Hai can’t help but be happy.

The wilder a fish used to create a pot of stewed fish, the more the flavour will be out of this world. Thinking up to here, Jiang Hai quickly began to clean it up. First he retrieved in the now bare hook from it’s mouth, then picked it up by the tail and gave it a wash by the river side. He can’t help but admire this fish’s strength. As soon as it touched water, it almost pulled Jiang Hai into the water. If was anyone else then they probably would’ve lost it already.

Sadly Jiang Hai is not a normal person. Under the hidden powers of his body, he pulled the fish out of the water and tossed it into the already prepared cooler. However as soon as it entered the cooler, Jiang Hai is troubled since this cooler is just too small. The cooler is only roughly 1.2 meters in length, now that there is a 1 meter long carp in it, there is no space for anymore.

“So bothersome!” Jiang Hai sighed as he looked at the time. It has only been an hour since he left, originally he planned to waste the whole afternoon here, but from the looks of things, this plan’s headed for the bin.

If he continues to fish, then he has no places to keep them, so he might as well as leave. After a quick thought, Jiang Hai dumped the rest of the worms on the ground, packed up everything else and prepared to leave. However just before he left, a sudden roar of engines came from the direction of Winthrop, then followed by the appearance of a motorcade. To be specific is a motorcade made up of 2 cars and 4 motorcycles.

Originally Jiang Hai thought that they are on their way to Boston, but that thought quickly disappeared since when these people saw him from far away, they changed their route and headed directly for him. Seeing this motorcade headed for him, Jiang Hai is really perplexed since his sixth sense is screaming DANGER!, but since when was he not more dangerous than anything thrown at him? He was hoping these guys don’t do something stupid, otherwise he doesn’t mind teaching them an unforgettable lesson. Just as he was sorting out his thoughts and packing away everything onto the ATV, this motorcade came to a stop in front of him in a perfect crescent with him in the middle.

“Yo, isn’t this our mysterious chinese investor? You really are dumb as hell for

not bring your dogs with you today.” Just as Jiang Hai was wondering who these people are, a man wearing a cowboys hat and some hippy clothing appeared out of one of the cars. With one look, everything became clear.

Originally Jiang Hai was wondering who he messed with since arriving here, as he doesn't remember upsetting anyone. However upon seeing the person who spoke, he finally understood. This person is none other than the one who threatened him at the bar the other night, called fara something something. From the looks of things now, he is here to fulfill his original promises.

“My dogs, you say it as if you've meet them. If you got anything to say, then you better spit it out quickly. I still need to go back to cook dinner.” Jiang Hai answered back. Speaking of dogs, his first thoughts were Po and Yun, but they shouldn't have met them yet. Then it became clear, the dogs this guy is referring to is Robins and the others.....

However the words are already out, can't really take it back, so might as well hard line to the bitter end.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 45: Ruthless

Chapter 45: Ruthless

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Huh? Looks like our wealthy chinese friend here is really in a rush. Let me get straight to the point, us friends here are currently tight on cash, so we’re here looking to borrow some. We’re all neighbours, so you probably won’t reject us right?” Seeing that Jiang Hai is still this hard lined even after being surrounded, Faraday is really stunned but also happy. From the looks of things, this guy still doesn’t know what he is in for.

On Faraday’s side, including himself, there are a total of 11 people against a single Jiang Hai. 11 vs 1, where did Jiang Hai’s confidence come from? Right now, he seems to have Jiang Hai where he wants him to be; his expression is just giving it all away.

“Oh sorry, I don’t know you very well. So I reject your offer.” Jiang Hai replied without even thinking. Upon hearing this, everyone on the other side were clearly shocked, but quickly all bursted out laughing.

“Oh, what a pitiful yellow monkey. You really thought that we are here to discuss things? If so, then I only have one thing to say. Give us your money!” After having laughed enough, one of Faraday’s white buddies attempted to intimidate Jiang Hai.

“Ah so it’s like this, I understand now. Sadly I’m not prepared to give you guys anything. However, since you guys wasted so much of my time, I should be asking you guys for compensations. Pigs.” Jiang Hai replied shaking his head and holding out his hand as if saying pay up. The Jiang Hai right now is really asking for a beating.

However these people were clearly shocked by Jiang Hai’s reply. This is because this isn’t how things should’ve turned out to be! Originally they thought they thought out every possible action Jiang Hai might take.

One, pay up like a good boy.

Two, stall for time by saying he doesn't have any on him, then take a beating and finally pay up.

Three, hard line to the end by calling for help from either the police or Robins and others.

Four, fight with everyone here.

The only thing they missed out is the situation right now where Jiang Hai gives no shits about them.

Too arrogant! Who is the one getting robbed here! Not only is he standing on American soil, but he also called us pigs! He is seriously courting death! Thinking up to here, these people first looked at each other before getting out of their cars and charged at him. Yet Jiang Hai is just standing there staring at them as if looking at idiots.

"Fk U!!!" Seeing the look Jiang Hai is giving them, one of them finally had enough of it and threw a punch directly at Jiang Hai's face. But sadly just when his fist was about to connect with Jiang Hai's face, a hand shot up and blocked it. However now Jiang Hai's grin turned ice cold.

"You guys started this first, this is purely self protection!" Jiang Hai said lightly.

"Shit, let go, I'ma fking beat your face in!" Hearing what Jiang Hai said, this person who had his fist blocked roared without any hesitation. At the same time he also tried to kick Jiang Hai in the stomach, but Jiang Hai is just that much quicker.

With a quick kick, this guy's knee is pretty much busted and fell down. After he finally stood up, he suddenly felt Jiang Hai applying force on his fist. Slowly he felt pain from his elbow as his arm was twisted around and let out cries of despair.

"Get him!" Seeing his buddy in despair, Faraday here can't hold in his anger anymore. With a wave and a yell, everyone charged at Jiang Hai. Yet Jiang Hai is actually standing there smiling.

With a twist of his right hand, all they can hear is a snap sound and that person's elbow is forcibly broken. With his elbow broken, this person suddenly lost all will to fight. All he did is cradle his elbow, roll around on the ground and

cry like a sorry ass loser. With regards to these small fries, they are just regular gangsters with all the looks but none of the bite. They also aren't military, extremists, or athletes. This kind of pain is well beyond their acceptance range, apart from fainting from the pain, how else would they endure it?

Unfortunately, right now no one is paying this guy any attention; because Jiang Hai has already clashed with them and is brawling with the rest of them. Jiang Hai's body's powers are currently at that of human limits. Although it hasn't exceeded human limits, but he isn't far off. Of course he is also lacking combat experience, so he is lacking some confidence in this 1 vs 10 brawl, but an arrow that has been cocked must be fired. According to his standing as a wealthy individual, if it isn't a face to face situation, then he has thousands of ways to end these guys. Yet, now that they are face to face, Jiang Hai isn't willing to admit defeat, so the only solution now is to let their fists do the talking.

In a flash, Jiang Hai is already in front of Faraday. A single powerful kick to his chest and he is sent flying. Along the way he also dragged three others with him. Just as these people were trying to get up, Jiang Hai turned around and faced the attacker on his left. Although he hasn't learned how to fight before, but his instincts are telling him to be ruthless, because if he isn't, then the one lying on the ground later would be him. As such, he isn't fooling around anymore, and became completely ruthless.

Seeing the ferocious gangster wannabe cursing on his left, Jiang Hai answered him with a fist to the nose. When they connected, just by the feeling, Jiang Hai can tell that this guy's nose is at least in shambles. As for this person, this punch clearly knocked the living day lights out of him and he fainted on the spot.

Although this punch knocked a person out, but by throwing this punch, Jiang Hai has lost his center of gravity. On the opposite side, a bunch of other attackers had already reached him and are throwing out kicks and punches. By protecting his head and enduring everything else, Jiang Hai found a gap and retaliated. Even though two others arrived behind him, a kick for each of them and a right hook for a person on the right, sent them all flying again. This time the collateral damages had been minimized with only one person being dragged out of the fight.

Taking the chance, Jiang Hai grabbed one of the remaining attackers by the

neck and smashed his head against against another attacker's head. Yet, how can Jiang Hai's strength be compared to those of ordinary people? Although this guy tried to protect himself, but the smash still left him bloody and unconscious. At this moment, several kicks and punches also landed on Jiang Hai. Enduring the pain, Jiang Hai grabbed one of the people's leg with his right hand and sent him flying with a kick. Then with his left hand, smashed someone else's knee.

"AHHHHH!!" holding his broken leg, this person suddenly lost his balance and heavily fell on the ground.

With so much combat going on, Faraday and the others who were dragged down with him finally stood up. Seeing the 4 that are already wasted, the only one left who is still somewhat ok would be the one who was dragged out, and the one who was kicked out. Looking at this sight in front of them, the four can't help but shiver in cold sweat.

Originally they were still puzzled as to why this Jiang Hai is not afraid and willing to face them head on. Now however they finally understood. It's not that Jiang Hai is afraid. Rather it's because he has ability to face them all head on. So what if it's 1 vs 10, it's not like he can't beat them all. Trying to catch up with this situation, these gangsters are clearly dumbstruck.

"You guys go stall him, I'll go get my piece from the car." Seeing the frightening sight in front of him, Faraday quickly recovered and yelled out to his buddies.

These few gangsters first hesitated but still decided to charge forward. It's not that they don't want to go back to grab a gun, but rather it's because during the time while they were hesitating, Jiang Hai has already ko-ed the other two. One of them had his arm broken, while the other was hit on the back of his head. After he got knocked out, Jiang Hai added in an extra kick, just in case. With the power behind this kick, this guy is now lying on the ground coughing up blood. From the looks of things, his organs are damaged and a couple of his ribs are also probably broken. If these four also went back to retrieve their piece then none of them will be left unscathed. Hence, they can only rush forward.

Having settled the other 6, Jiang Hai isn't without any injuries. By his standards, if he knew any fighting techniques then all of these gangsters would've already been knocked out. However since he does not know any, he

can only face them head on and rely on his instincts. Luckily he kept protecting his head, so only a single punch landed on his face, but it still drew blood. Towards these superficial wounds, Jiang Hai paid them no mind.

Noticing the 3 charging at him again, Jiang Hai still didn't have any ideas of letting them off the hook. With a burst of speed, his body flew towards the 3. Two simultaneous punches landed almost at the same time on the two that were on the left and right. With the huge power behind them, the two were again sent flying. Sadly their buddy who was in the middle had no time to pay any attention, since with a kick aimed at Jiang Hai's lower half, he is prepared to be ruthless. Even if he is really injured then at most he would be jailed for a few years, but that is still better than being ko-ed and suffering major injuries.

Noticing the low-blow, Jiang Hai quickly twisted his body. Just as the other person was coming in for the kick, he suddenly jumped up to dodge the kick, and with the tip of his elbow, came crashing down on this person head. With the huge amount of force behind this attack, Jiang Hai clearly heard cracking sounds. However, he doesn't know whether it is the skull or the neck that is broken. If it is the former, then he is at least alive. But if it is the latter, then he is better off dead.

Kai: Here's another cliff-san

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 46: Police

Chapter 46: Police

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Shit, shit, shit!” Seeing the unstoppable Jiang Hai, Faraday is really in a rush. While cursing, he opened his car’s trunk with shaking hands and pulled out the M16.

Currently this M16 is unloaded, but that is not a problem as the magazines are nearby. Hastily grabbing the 5 shot magazines, Faraday hurriedly loaded the gun. Although these guns are for civilian use, but no one can doubt their ability to kill.

Having loaded the gun and cocked the chambers, Faraday’s eyes are now blood red because his last buddy has just been ko’d by Jiang Hai. Now Faraday has no other thoughts but to get rid of Jiang Hai. If he really killed Jiang Hai here then that is all to bad luck. After all, the cocked arrow must be fired, so with a humph, he brought up the gun and aimed to finish Jiang Hai off.

“Go to hell!!” Hearing the yell, Jiang Hai immediately turned his attention to Faraday. ([1](#))

As soon as Jiang Hai saw the barrel of the gun, he is clearly shocked. Although his body is at human limits, it still can’t go head to head against bullets. If he is shot then he will die. But he never would’ve thought that these average gangsters came prepared for firefights.

Time seemed to have slowed down as Jiang Hai thought of many possibilities. If he attacked Faraday now, then he will be shot at. Without any bullet dodging skills, he really has no confidence to evade them; hence this possibility is out the window. Then the next possibility is to attack him from a long distance to remove this threat. But if you want to attack from a long distance, then the best solution is to use guns. Sadly he didn’t bring any with him, so he can only make do with something else.

At this moment, he glanced around and saw a motorcycle with a motorcycle helmet on top. Seeing this, Jiang Hai’s eyes brightened and he rushed towards it.

Quickly arriving beside the motorcycle, with a quick flick of his foot, the helmet is already in the air. Without any hesitation, it is sent flying with a kick. Although everything that happened might seem long, but all these actions were done in less than 2 seconds. It can be said that in a flash, just as Faraday brought up the gun, the helmet was already sent flying towards him. When he was aiming and searching for Jiang Hai, he didn't find him. Rather, what he found is a bright red helmet in his sights.

Without much rotation, the helmet kissed Faraday's face with a bang. As a result, there is blood everywhere, you can also find a couple of knocked out teeth hidden in the nearby grass. Faraday only felt dazed, he randomly fired a shot and collapsed.

Seeing the last one of the bunch collapse, Jiang Hai let out a deep breath. Close call. During the high pressure situation before, Jiang Hai felt nothing. Now that he has time to relax, he felt pain throughout his whole body. Not only that, but also the tiresome feeling that comes after an adrenaline rush. The spots that were hit before also began to hurt. This time, he was really careless.

"Now what? Call the cops?" Seeing all the people collapsed on the ground, Jiang Hai is stuck.

But without the need for him to call the cops, the tell tale sound of police sirens can be heard from the distance. Comparable with the police in China. American police also generally show up only when everything is settled. In a row, 6 to 7 police cars stopped in front of the encirclement. As these police got out of their cars and saw the disastrous scene in front of them, the originally relaxed cops suddenly became serious.

"Kneel, hands on your head." Different from the police in China, where they need permission to use guns, the police in America will use them in almost all situations. Immediately upon seeing the scene, the police already pulled out their weapons and aimed at Jiang Hai and the group.

"Cop! Cop! Help, call the ambulance!" Seeing the arrival of the cops, the originally scared shitless group finally woke up from the nightmare and started to scream cries of despair.

Hearing their cries, the cops walked up immediately. But upon seeing everyone

lying on the ground and the sitting Jiang Hai, they became extremely serious.

“Don’t move. Hands on your head.” The majority of the police first checked out the surroundings then went to report everything and call for ambulances. 3 other police officers slowly walked up and pointed their guns at Jiang Hai, just in case he resists.

“Exhausted, do as you see fit.” Seeing the approaching cops, Jiang Hai stated.

Upon hearing that Jiang Hai is out of strength, the 3 cops first looked at each other, then one of them put away his gun and cuffed Jiang Hai. This time, Jiang Hai did nothing, but it’s not like he is willing to be caught, rather, he is seriously exhausted. And he if really were to run, then there is no telling if the police will actually fire. From the very beginning, he can’t be blamed for this matter. Everything was just self defence. Furthermore, it was 1 vs 10 and they used guns, so even if he were to kill someone, then everything is still self defence not excessive self defence.

Essentially he is the victim here, so of course he isn’t afraid. After being cuffed, Jiang Hai was escorted away by 2 officers. Not long after, 7 ambulances all arrived at the same time. After packing everyone away, the police took Jiang Hai for a ride back to the police station.

Soon, Jiang Hai was stuffed into an interrogation room with two investigators. These two investigators actually appear pretty young for what they do. A man and a woman. The woman appears to be in her late twenties, probably just hired. The man on the other side appears to be somewhat older, but the looks he gave the woman, well he is always staring at her, you can tell that he has thoughts for her. However the woman chose to ignore him completely.

“Name.” The female officer gave Jiang Hai a look then went back to procedures and asked.

“Jiang Hai.”

“Gender?”

“Male.”

“Age?”

“27.”

“Citizen or green card?”

“Green card, investment green card. Otherwise I won’t even be here.” Jiang Hai replied as he look at the woman.

“Be honest here, moron. Answer when asked, we don’t need other shits.” Hearing the reply, the woman is clearly unhappy. Seeing the expression she is making, the male officer forgot everything and scolded Jiang Hai first.

Hearing the scolding, Jiang Hai is stunned. Before, he had always heard how civilized american police are, uhh, relatively. However, from the looks of things, they are actually pretty easy to anger. If Jiang Hai was any normal citizen then he would endure this, but now he isn’t a normal citizen. Hence, he sat back and gave off a look that says try me.

“Don’t say extra stuff when we don’t need you to. You look after him for a bit, I’m going to do a background check on him.” The female officer clearly is even more unhappy with what her partner said. As for why she was unhappy before, it was mainly because of what Jiang Hai said. That he is an investment immigrant.

From the looks he is giving off, he clearly isn’t a white collar worker in Boston. After all, when they caught him, only the ATV belonged to him. If he really lived in Boston, then there is no way he can reach there with that vehicle. This proves that Jiang Hai is a resident here. However, the east coast is different from the west coast where most of the chinese investors are gathered. There aren’t many investment immigrants near Boston. Especially in the Winthrop area. From what she can remember, recently the only chinese investment project is only at Green Forest.

If this Jiang Hai here is really the owner of Green Forest then they really need to curb their attitudes. Since in America, the group of people that you never want to mess with are the wealthy. And the owner of the Green Forest is clearly one of them.

“Alright, go ahead.” Hearing what she had to say, the man happily replied, then followed her out with his eyes. After she left, he sat back down and stared at Jiang Hai with a look full of ridicule. Seeing that Jiang Hai isn’t old and not wearing anything expensive, he quickly thought of something fun to do.

“Do you understand how grave your crimes are?” The man asked full of disdain.

“Nope.” Hearing this, Jiang Hai straight up replied. He really want to see how far this person will go.

“You don’t? Haha, then let me tell you. You injured 11 people, within these 11 people, almost everyone has serious injuries. Em, to be specific, 3 of them has their arms broken, 2 have broken legs, 4 have broken ribs, and 2 of them are seriously injured. The light one is only concussions plus some broken bones, while the heavier one has concussions, internal bleeding in the head, broken face bones, and 7 broken teeth. Hehe, you were really ruthless there. Just these crimes are enough to send you away from several decades.”

In America, it is very rare to be sentenced to the death penalty but it’s not impossible. Most of the time, it is just imprisonment. However when compared to sentencing in China where death sentences are 15 years and indefinite sentencing are 10 years, the time period sentenced in America is much much higher. Several decades, several centuries and even several millenniums are all possible. This is truly sentencing for life.

“That was all self defence. They even brought their guns into this. Even if I were to kill them, that is still within legal bounds.” Jiang Hai continued. Yet when Jiang Hai said this, the man is clearly delighted.

Notes

1. Kai: This happens all the time, be it movies or novels, people simply don’t understand what a sneak attack entails. He could’ve aimed at Jiang Hai’s foot, shot it to stop him from moving, and continued from there.

TI: Then again even if they fired, they never seem to be able to hit...

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 47: Chaos ensues

Chapter 47: Ensuing chaos

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

TL NOTE: Inb4 all of you start your counter arguments here on what you read. Do try to google stuff like this cause from what I know, some county police are actually like this, but maybe not as badly portrayed in the story.

“Gun? Who saw it? You say self defence, but is it really self defence? You have to understand foreigner; here in America, what you say doesn’t matter, but what I say does. As long as I say you are guilty then you are guilty. If I say you are not then you’re not.” The man slowly walked up to Jiang Hai, and used his fingers to endlessly drum the table in front of him with a face full of disdain.

“What do you mean by this?” Seeing the person in front of him, Jiang Hai is actually really excited. As he laid back and looked at the man in front of him, he is really looking forward to what he has to say.

“You still don’t understand even after all of this? You chinese people seriously don’t get to be called the second smartest race in the world. Your wisdom is like that of monkeys. Alright, here is the deal chink since you don’t understand. This understand?” Hearing Jiang Hai’s reply, this officer is clearly dissatisfied. At the same time he rubbed his right index and middle finger together with his thumb.

“Money?” Seeing the gesture, Jiang Hai easily guessed out what he is asking for, but then shook his head cheerfully.

“You’re pretty familiar with these stuff huh. You’ve probably done this a lot right?” Jiang Hai spat out word by word as he rested his chin on his hands and stared at the man in front of him. He really wanted to see if all crows under the sky are this black.

“Ah, is this really that rare? I suggest you to pack up whatever you’re thinking since it’s all the same here in our police system. No matter if it’s Winthrop, or

Boston, or even the whole state of Massachusetts. This can end here with me for a tiny amount, but if this goes up to the chief or the vice chief then the price will probably skyrocket.” The man said as narrowed his eyes. Whether this is true or not, Jiang Hai doesn’t care. Even if this is fake, he is still going to take this as if it is real.

“Alright, give me a number.” Jiang Hai replied.

“Sweet, we have one price here \$50,000. I’ll make sure you are safe and sound.” Seeing that Jiang Hai is already fell into the trap, this male said cheerfully. Those huge eyes of his is clearly stating how happy he is.

“50,000? Is everyone in Winthrop this greedy? And from the looks of things, the camera behind you is still recording.” Hearing what he had to say, Jiang Hai first smiled then commented unhappily.

“That’s for our procedures. Just in case something happens to you with me here. To be honest if I really want to beat you, then I wouldn’t be doing it here. But don’t worry, stuff like this exist only happens I want it to. Here I am the law, I’m also the whole police system. I suggest you to stop stalling and answer. 50,000, yes or no.” As Jiang Hai’s eyes landed on the camera behind him, the man coldly said as he ignored the looks.

“Give? Go screw yourself. If you have anything left to say then wait till my lawyer is here and discuss it with them.” Jiang Hai coldly replied.

“Your lawyer? You have a lawyer? If we don’t invite a lawyer for you, what lawyer do you have!” Hearing the reply, the man is clearly unafraid as he clearly doesn’t believe that Jiang Hai is wealthy enough to request his own lawyer. You have to know that lawyers have one of the highest incomes in America, but where does this money come from? That’s clearly from the wealthy individuals who request their assistance. From what the man can tell, just by how Jiang Hai is dressed; he looks like someone who has had to wait for several years before getting the chance to open a restaurant here in America.

After all what Jiang Hai is wearing from head to toe is just sportswear and outdoor clothing. This stuff in China is actually pretty expensive, but here in America it is seriously cheap. For example, stuff from Nike or Adidas in China is specifically for the rich kids, while here it is for the middle or lower class.

Normally, everyone here only wears them when there is a sports game or something, otherwise they wouldn't even think of wearing it.

As such, this officer clearly believes in what he sees. For people like him what lawyer is there? However, when Jiang Hai heard this, he didn't bother to continue the conversation but looked back with a smile because his overpowered hearing clearly heard people approaching. Sure enough, a pitter-patter of footsteps can be heard coming from outside.

"Mr. Adams, this way. Your client is in here." Right after hearing that female officer speak, the door to the room was opened.

The previous female officer escorted a 40ish year old man into the room. This man is clearly dressed to impress. A set of golden rimmed glasses, a well ironed suit and a face with no hint of smiles. As soon as he entered, that pair of eagle like eyes clearly scanned the room before resting on the sitting Jiang Hai.

"Hello mister Jiang Hai. Sorry for the wait, I'm Moses Adams, your lawyer." Upon seeing Jiang Hai the lawyer introduced himself and offered a handshake to the still cuffed Jiang Hai.

Regarding this lawyer, this is also the first time Jiang Hai has met him. The lawyer was found through one of his Centurion card services. When he was still in the police car, he made a call to that familiar yet unused number that was set up specifically for this 3 star VIP user.

After confirming his identity and location, there is no trouble left for him to bother with. For this lawyer, no questions are needed, he is clearly one registered for any Centurion's 3 star VIP's exclusive use. His abilities is definitely unquestionable. To be fair, this is only because Jiang Hai doesn't understand how good this lawyer is. This lawyer can be said to be, in the lawyer world, straight up overpowered.

This lawyer is from the fourth largest law firm, Skadden, Arps, Slate, Meagher & Flom LLP and Affiliates. This law firm mainly handles major stuff like international arbitration, international law and policies, international trade and antitrust legislations. Stuff like these ordinary disputes, they won't pay much attention to. However, the saying money can buy you anything works perfectly in this scenario. Since for wealthy individuals like Jiang Hai, even the smallest civil

scuffle is still a big problem.

“I don’t understand why you guys are still holding my client in custody because I’ve seen the street footage. My client here is clearly the victim, but you guys still have him cuffed and in an interrogation room. I believe what you are doing here is a clear breach of responsibility. I have the power to sue you.” After shaking Jiang Hai’s hands, this man turned around to face the two and very clearly stated. Hearing this, the woman is still somewhat fine as this is just a breach of responsibilities. Specifically, she hasn’t even seen the videos yet so she isn’t clear, but the man here is clearly awkward and scared.

“If they don’t lock me up, then how do they get their bribes?” Seeing the expression on the man’s face, Jiang Hai lightly commented. Jiang Hai, while being someone ‘good’ is not any saint, and will never give anyone the chance to regret what they’ve done. The scene of this guy arrogantly asking for money is still fresh in his mind. Now, why would he let go of this perfect chance.

“What?!” Hearing this, the woman is clearly shocked then turned to look at the man.

“No, this isn’t be possible. Sir, is your head working properly? How can this even happen.” The man clearly denied this, but at the same time slowly moved towards the camera.

“Don’t let him touch the camera, our conversation is on there.” Seeing this guy’s intentions, Jiang Hai clearly understood what he is doing and yelled out.

Upon hearing this, the man stopped hiding his actions and turned to grab the camera. However Jiang Hai is clearly faster and stuck out his feet. This straight up caused the man to trip and fall. On the other side, the lawyer also went into action and secured the camera in a couple of steps. Upon reviewing what was recorded, he is also shocked, because everything is clearly recorded there.

“No, I was only making a, a, joke. Yes, it was all a joke.” The man tried frantically tried to get up and said with a nervous expression to Jiang Hai, the lawyer and his partner.

“Sir, we will examine this to fullest of our abilities. If this situation is true then we will prosecute him to the fullest.” Hearing the defence the man put up, the woman on the side hesitated but stated to the lawyer and Jiang Hai. It was

obvious that what she wanted the real evidence in the lawyer's hands. If the situation really escalated, then that is when real problems come.

"I can't do that. This guy clearly stated that all the police system here are like this, even the victim here needs to offer up bribes. From this alone you can tell how screwed up his character is. He even said that the chief and the vice chief here are all in on this. Even the Boston police force and the state police force were also mentioned here. This is truly a big problem." The lawyer replied.

To be honest, this problem really depends on how Jiang Hai feels. After all, he is the witness here. This problem can either escalate or go away with a couple of words from him. But from the looks of things so far, he isn't prepared to let this matter go quickly. Since the matter is going to escalate, then his lawyer's abilities will be displayed here.

"Since it's like this, then there is an unknown amount of accomplices with him. As such I'm sorry miss, but I can't hand over this evidence to you, because who knows if what he said is true or not? This matter implicates your chief, vice chief, the Boston police force, and even state officials. Hence, to avoid any possible chance of evidence tampering, I will file a formal complaint to the federal justice committee." Hearing Jiang Hai's decision, this lawyer picked up the camera again, straightened out his suit and stated with complete seriousness.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 48: No mercy

Chapter 48: No mercy

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Boss, you alright?” As soon as he left the interrogation room, he was met by the nervous Robins and his other employees in the police station.

Winthrop isn't a very large town. If something major happens, it doesn't take long before everyone knows about it. When Robins and the rest heard about this, the first thing they did is rush to the police station to see if there is anything they can do. However, Jiang Hai is actually happy that Robins, Burke, Philemon, Harmen, Bell and Edward are waiting for him; it doesn't matter what happens in the future; at least he can trust all of them now.

“It's nothing, just some bruises.” Jiang Hai said to the group.

“I think you should go apply for a carrying license. Otherwise your safety would be a big problem.” Hearing that Jiang Hai was fine, Robins thought about it, but still spoke what was on his mind.

“Um, let's worry about this later.” Jiang Hai also wanted a carrying license, but this license requires the approval of the local police. Right now he is suing the police, so it's not the wisest time to apply.

“Mister Jiang Hai. How do you want to proceed with this?” Seeing that Jiang Hai has finished catching up with his subordinates, the lawyer came forward and asked for instructions, because everything rests on what Jiang Hai wants to do.

“I was almost killed back there! So of course I can't be benevolent. How many charges can I give them?” Most Chinese like to make a big problem small, then make it go away. However, Jiang Hai is the complete opposite. If someone messes with him, then he will retaliate to end them. It doesn't matter what happens in between, he will use the fullest of his abilities.

“From the recordings on the cameras, charges for extortion, kidnapping, and deliberate injuries are the core components. Since they also used guns, then we can also charge them for intent to kill.” The lawyer said after some thought.

America is the same as China, where there is an eye in the sky in most cities. The so called eye in the sky is a monitoring system that has almost no dead corners. For example, a camera on top of a telephone pole, another on at an intersection, one on a tree and so on. Apart from some slum areas, there are cameras everywhere. Of course these exclude most private areas. For a lawyer like Adams, getting footage from these cameras is a piece of cake.

“Sure, that works. What about the police?” Jiang Hai asked.

“The police case is a lot simpler. We have testimonies for extortion, threats, and bribe acceptance. These alone are more than enough to bury them. At the very least, he will be sent in for a couple months.” The lawyer replied. Hearing this, Jiang Hai is clearly unhappy. That guy threatened him for so long and he only has a punishment of a few days. It’s too easy for him.

“Alright let’s go with that. I only care about the results. Give me the best you can do. Money is not a problem. If I sit back and do nothing with this, then I might as well as leave.” Jiang Hai stated.

“That’s for sure.” Adams happily replied. Since money isn’t a problem, then there is no problem.

However, the police on the side who heard this are clearly unhappy because they know they brought this on themselves. Sadly, Jiang Hai doesn’t care about them at all. Under the escort of his workers, they left the station. But as soon as they exited, they were surrounded by anxious people. Upon seeing this many people surrounding them, Jiang Hai is clearly scared because he wasn’t ready for another fight. However upon closer examination he found that most of these people are men and women in their 50s and 60s. Clearly, they don’t pose that big of a threat to him.

“Sir, please, let go of my son!”

“Sir, they are just young people. Please forgive them. We can talk about compensations privately!”

“Mister...” “Sir...”

Of course these people didn’t attack Jiang Hai and the rest, but surrounded him and begged. Upon hearing all of this, Jiang Hai’s expression turned ice cold.

There is no need for anyone to explain to him who these people are because he already knows; these are clearly the family members of those guys in the station. Sadly, Jiang Hai is no saint so he also has no good impressions of these family members.

“This is the consequences of their actions and my choice will not change. Now, excuse me.” Facing this group of people, there is no need to take any heed of them because if you do, there is no telling when they will show up again, and again, and again. As such, Jiang Hai simply said what was needed and left for his car in the parking lot.

“Sir. Sir, please, it’s all because I didn’t take care of my brother. However much compensation you ask for, we’ll pay. But please let...” Seeing Jiang Hai entering his car, a cowboy rushed forward and hurriedly said. Jiang Hai remembered this person. He is one of the people Robins recommended; called Augustine Wilson, also Faraday’s older brother.

“He is a grown man. He has to take responsibilities for the actions he takes. Since you guys didn’t discipline him properly to begin with, then don’t come begging for me. Alright, let’s go.” Seeing the impatient young man, Jiang Hai specially rolled down his windows and coldly replied. Then indicated his intentions to Robins and left with everyone.

Seeing the disappearing tail lights, these people are dumbstruck. Although they thought that Jiang Hai’s attitude might be unyielding, but they never would’ve thought it to be this unyielding. After a bit, some of the women can’t hold back any more and tears began to flow, while the men on side let out a sigh. This mess will clearly be difficult to clean up.

“Boss, your dinner died! You still going to eat it?” Jiang Hai, Robins and Philemon in the same car, the other two are driven by Burke and Edward, while Bell and Harmen are riding shotgun. Jiang Hai has no clue what the atmosphere is like in the other two cars, but the atmosphere in this one is clearly bad. Not a single sound was made, but after 5 minutes, Philemon can’t hold it in any longer and spoke.

To be fair, this is understandable. Since Robins and the rest are also from this town, although they are not too familiar with the people who tried to rob Jiang

Hai, they still watched them grow up. Now the situation is kind of awkward. Jiang Hai needed to show his powers; he needs the people in the town to understand that he is not to be messed with. As such, he will not let this matter slide easily. However, they are also close to a lot of people in town. Now that they are stuck in the middle, it's pretty much stuck between a rock and a hard place.

But for this job, they still made up their minds. This matter does not concern them so they will not participate in it. In America, most people are welcoming, but they know that there is no favours to talk about here. There is no way that they are going to bet their jobs on the line just to beg for some people that they aren't even familiar with. As such, after some thoughts Philemon spoke first.

"Ah, it died? That big of a carp, what a waste." Jiang Hai replied with a sigh. From the looks of things, the dream of having fish soup is shattered.

"These kind of fish is all over the place in the rivers here. There is also a lot that are much bigger. Normally we don't even go fishing for them; rather we shoot them." Robins also reluctantly joined the conversation.

"Boss if you want to play around, then you can go pick up some bow and arrows from the outdoors shop in town." Robins continued.

"Oh? Even that's possible? Oh well, it's already this late. Everybody probably hasn't eaten yet so let's just get something in town." Jiang Hai nodded.

"Alright, let me call my wife then." Philemon joined in, then he called home and told his wife where they are headed. At the same time, Robins used the walkie-talkies and told the other two cars where they are headed. Soon after, the three cars all headed towards town.

America is a country based off immigrants. Because of this, the country itself has no traditions, no cultural traditions, nor any dark histories to settle. As such, the food here also has no speciality. But when someone mentions but food that represents America, then 90% of the time people will probably respond: fast food; or something related to fast food.

Yes, the majority of the restaurant sector in America are taken up by fast food restaurants. Apart from fast food, everything else is food from other countries. For example, chinese restaurants although they taste bad, but they are still based off of chinese dishes. There is japanese cuisine which consists of teriyaki,

sushi and such. korean cuisine with their grilled meats. Apart from these, there are also the expensive french cuisine, the most economical german cuisine which is made up of all meat, and the most popular italian cuisine.

You have to understand, pizza, a flagship in the fast food industry, is from Italy. What Jiang Hai and group are eating today is also italian food, but what they are after isn't pizza. Rather there are still a lot of other good tasting dishes in italian cuisine.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 49: Introduction to italian cuisine

Chapter 49: Introduction to italian cuisine

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

When most people think of italian cuisine, what is the first thing they think of? Pasta, pizza,, pizza, pasta, ...

Apart from these two, there are also a lot of other dishes in italian cuisine. Italians can't always live off of these two. Jiang Hai hasn't been to the real Italy, but there is definitely a lot of choices in the italian restaurant in Boston.

This restaurant, Italian gourmet, is a very well known italian restaurant in the area. Of course, Jiang Hai and the group have been here before so they are pretty familiar with the menu here.

"Let's first have 8 cheddar chowders, a whole fried squid, oh right it's fried cuttlefish, fried clams, 8 crab stuffed mushrooms, 2 Milanese veal shoulders, 2 veal scallopini, and 8 ham cheese steak. What do you guys want for the main course?" Looking at the menu in front of him, Jiang Hai immediately ordered a bunch. Most of these stuff are all either italian signature dishes or it's what the restaurant is famous for.

"We'll have some black pasta." Answered Robins after confirming with everyone else.

"Then 8 servings of black pasta." Jiang Hai stated to the waiter beside him.

Having finished ordering everything for now, the waiter left respectfully with the menus. Not long later, Philemon's wife arrived and everyone finally got together, before long their dishes are ready. First up is the appetizer soup, cheddar chowder. This type of soup is generally prepared in batches, hence unlimited refills. In the Boston region, you can find these types of chowders everywhere. However instead of cheddar, it's made with potatoes, fresh clams and some seasonal vegetables. Combining the flavours of the deep sea and the sweetness from the seasonal vegetables; you get the world renown Boston clam chowder.

After that came the appetizers and sides. The fried clams are just simply deep fried fresh clams with a crust. Add on a bit of sweet and sour sauce and it makes for a great appetizer.

Carb stuffed mushrooms is a side dish, but it is served on large individual plates. A large mushroom stuffed to the brim with crab meat and cheese. After baking, the cheese melts and mixes with the crab meat; making it a wonderful side to enjoy.

Fried cuttlefish is just fried squid rings, except it's just named differently in different areas. This is just like using different cuts of beef to make roast beef. The end product is all the same, but it's just named differently. Squeeze on a bit of lemon juice and it brings out the wonderful flavours that were hidden away.

Veal scallopini is this store's specialty; a dish that came from the store's boss's home town of Milan. First take some veal with celery, onions, bay leaves and spices, and cook until it becomes soft with white wine. After letting it cool off, it is served with a paste made of mashed squid and other types of fishes. The combination of beef and seafood is simply amazing.

Veal shoulders is prepared by cutting a veal shoulder into chunks, then letting it slowly cook with wine, tomatoes, and spices. Of course, the best part of this dish in Jiang Hai's opinion isn't the meat itself. Rather it is the marrows within the bones.

Ham cheese steak is just what it sounds like. Ham, cheese, and steak seared together. This is a dish solely made up of meat. This is also the dish that Jiang Hai was looking forward to the most; mainly due to its huge portions.

Lastly but not least came the main course, the black pasta. The dish itself is pretty good; it is most comparable with the buckwheat noodle dishes in China. The only difference is that it is bit bitter and you choose the sauce; but still taste great.

Most Americans love their sauces. Seafood sauce, ketchup, Mexican barbecue sauce, sweet and spicy sauces, and so on. If you can name them, they probably will have it. However, having eaten sweet and sour stuff day in and day out, Jiang Hai has had enough. Although he liked the sweet and sour taste when in China with food such as twice cooked pork, stir fried pepper and pork and so on. But

now all he wants is something that isn't sweet or sour, as such he had his pasta with only some butter, lemon juice and mexican hot sauce.

To be fair, when someone mentions hot peppers, most chinese will probably refuse to accept the truth. This is because people from the Sichuan area, Hunan province, and the South China area live off of hot peppers. However, in the international scene, the hottest pepper in China, the yellow lantern, isn't even ranked on the world's spiciest pepper chart.

First on the chart is a british chili. It is called the naga viper, where a bite will send you to the hospital. Previously, Jiang Hai heard of a story where someone who grew up in the Sichuan region decided to take the naga challenge. However after a single bite, he was sent to the hospital. A seriously deadly chilli.

Second on the chart is also a british chili. The trinidad scorpion butch T, a breed of the trinidad moruga scorpion. When preparing this chili, a gas mask is a must be worn because a whiff of this is also enough to send someone to the hospital.

Third on the list is India's bhut jolokia, also commonly known as ghost pepper. This pepper was originally used as a fence against animals in rural communities. Since a single pepper of this kind is enough to make an elephant cry, then how about a human being?

Fourth is Mexico's habanero. This is 3 times as spicy as the China's yellow lantern, and 20 times that of the facing heaven pepper. This species of pepper is only available dried and is banned from selling fresh because it is just too spicy. The hot sauce Jiang Hai is currently using has a bit of habanero, although it is just less than 5%, but it is still spicy enough.

This meal was satisfying for everyone. After having paid the bills, everyone left for home.

A specific mention needs to be made here. In most restaurants in America, chain fast food restaurant excluded, tips are paid separately from the food. The amount of tips is generally a percentage of the bill ranging between 10 to 15 percent. But the specifics depend on your mood and the waiter's attitude.

However, because Jiang Hai just has too much money, he normally always gives 15% tips. As such this entire meal costed him \$320, however \$370 with

tips.

When they finally returned the estate, everyone went back to their homes and retired for the night. Although everyone at the Green Forest is asleep, but an unfortunate soul is probably going to have to pull an all nighter. Moses Adams, being American Express's recommended lawyer, must display his abilities in front of wealthy individuals like Jiang Hai to strive to secure a regular client. Stuff like this might seem small for the wealthy, but there are many places where a lawyer can be helpful.

For example, stuff like labor and management disputes, large mergers, sales, purchases and so on. Even for stuff like an accounting company's accounting services, they can also help out. Even if a wealthy individual like Jiang Hai has no issues nothing all year round, just by being their fixed lawyer, they will still get several tens of thousands as income.

There is no way any lawyer will let go of chances like this. After all, in America, an average middle class family's annual income is only several tens of thousands. Because of this, after he left Winthrop, he didn't head back to Boston. Rather, he went to New York city and filed his lawsuit against Winthrop police, Boston police and Massachusetts police from there. Of course, Faraday and his group also meet their just desserts. Due to the video evidence in his hands and because this matter involves state workers, the FBI responded immediately.

Most lawsuit's charges are generally all talk but no bite. After all, it's just like what was video taped. Under the free information act, all state officials have their income available to the public. Even an excess of a couple dollars will easily have people questioning where it came from. Now that they are clearly taking bribes, how can the FBI not make a move immediately?

In America, normally the police don't dare to take anyone's money. Because if you take someone's money, then there is no guarantee that they wouldn't sue you after what they've done what you've asked them to do. Not only do you have to return the bribe, but also include extra hush money.

If someone gives you money and you report them, then not only will you have no problems, but the other party might even be sentenced to jail by the court. Plus, you might also be able to receive some rewards for this. Regarding this,

people in China generally consider this too inhumane as everything involves money.

However due to this, the corruption situation in America is still controllable. Since most of a politician's income comes from governmental contributions and some merchants. For example, when they want to sell a piece of land, then they will sell this information to people who can contest for it. However they won't reveal for how much, but only what is for sale. This way the competitors have time to prepare the money required to buy this piece of land. Just from this alone, state officials can get a nice income. They won't even consider reporting these people because the rewards for reporting them just isn't worth the effort.

As such, they generally are too afraid to take these benefits. Hence this is only bullshit made up from that idiot officer. Because they can be cleared of these matters with just some quick checks. Hence when these officials heard the news of this, they only felt a bit of inconvenience but that is about it.

However, Winthrop's police force is a different matter altogether. Since the criminal here is part of their police force, so if they say they aren't a part of this, then who will believe them?

There is an old saying in China, subordinates follow the example of their superiors. Although America doesn't have idioms like this, but the meaning behind them is still clear.

Kai: I want some of the dishes mentioned at the start♥♥ (I'll be generous and give PGT all the peppers :3)

TI: While I was translating this, I actually went and made pasta during it to satisfy my raging hunger. On a side note, NO, NO, GOD! PLEASE NO!!!
NOOOOOOOOOOO.

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 50: Boat shopping

Chapter 50: Boat shopping

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

If not for the example set by his superiors, an ordinary police officer like him wouldn't even think of extorting this brazenly. To be precise, although his superiors may not have extorted anyone themselves, they know what is going on under their watch. Since this is known, then obviously there is a cut that goes to his superiors from his multiple acts of extortion. More importantly, it doesn't matter if the superiors are actually innocent since the department of internal affairs will simply assume everyone is guilty until proven otherwise. Whether that guilt be extortion, receiving a cut, or simply negligence of duty remains to be investigated.

The chief and vice chief of Winthrop's police force were both woken up in the middle of the night on the same day. After getting briefed on the situation, they pretty much went nuts; especially the chief. He was originally a detective from Boston, but because he was approaching the retirement age, he was reassigned here in recent years as the local chief. He has no knowledge of the detailed situation in the local police department, and he is just waiting to retire. However who knew that he would face this pile of a mess. Don't even mention regular retirement, if he isn't sentenced for a couple years then that is just being light on him. As such, he rained curses on the idiots who are involved in this in debacle.

As for the vice chief, he knows a bit about what's happening. He has also received bribes from the officer before; it can be said that the vice chief is that officer's protection. Unfortunately this is America, not China. As long as someone has some money and wants a mess to get big, then there is no such thing as benevolence. After receiving the call, his face drained of all colors. Right now he isn't thinking of how to bury this matter because it is just not possible. Rather, he is thinking of how to remove himself from this matter.

However the difficult part of trying to remove himself from this matter lies on

Jiang Hai's side. Hence he is thinking whether or not he should pay Jiang Hai a visit. Sadly, when he paid Jiang Hai a visit the next day, he missed out. Not because Jiang Hai is out hiding from the media or something, rather, he is out boat shopping.

Following the development of the estate, the direction Jiang Hai's estate is headed has already been determined. So far, it is mainly cattle ranching with some seafood extraction from the fishery, since this can also bring in substantial amounts of profits for Jiang Hai.

These couple of days, braving the bone chilling waters, Edward constantly dove to confirm the state of the fishery. From his conclusion, the fishery is in great condition. From what he can see, there are many different types of fish here. Schools of mackerel, cod, and herring swimming around near the ocean surface. He even unexpectedly found some bonito migrating with the warm currents. Normally during this time of the year, these fish generally follow the warm currents south towards the equator; hence he can't understand why they stayed.

Apart from these fish, he didn't get a clear image of the condition on the seafloor. After all, he isn't like Jiang Hai, who can ignore water pressure and breathe under water. To find out the situation of the sea bed, he requires a boat.

As this fishery belongs to Jiang Hai, the responsibility to purchase boats belongs to him. As such, without any important matters to settle today, Edward convinced Jiang Hai to make a trip with him to Boston. Although there are shipyards in Winthrop going there right now is clearly a stupid decision. After all, Jiang Hai is very unwelcomed in the eyes of many townsfolk. Secondly, most of the boats built here are just boats. If they want to order a large ship, not even mentioning the time required to build it here, the quality of the resulting ship is just average. Hence, after some research, they decided to head to Boston.

Boston being a very well known coastal city, of course has its own harbor. Since there is a harbour, then there are shipyards. The most famous one here is Charlestown Navy Yard, commonly referred to as Boston Navy Yard. Although this shipyard was shut down in the 70s, it is now part of Boston national historical park. There are also some other smaller yards in the area, and that is where Jiang Hai and Edward are headed.

After a not too long of a drive, the two arrived at Boston's port region. Even from far away, Jiang Hai can see a moored destroyer in the navy yard direction. This destroyer is now part of a local museum and entry is free of charge. It is used to promote patriotism in kids within the region. Although Jiang Hai is interested in touring the ship, but he can't right now. He can always come back when they are installing components for his ship(s) later. He followed Edward to a private shipyard called Temple of the sea (海洋圣殿).

According to Edward, this shipyard is a long established business in the Boston region. Having been established before the first world war, it only takes orders that are destined for Europe from the government. It's main business is based around component assembling, and does the job pretty well. During the second world war, it played an important role in supporting the European theater. Now with the tentative world peace, most of America's excess military production facilities have all been closed down. Apart from some large scale production plants, even some of the military's navy yards were closed down, hence their dwindling business.

Currently, the business mainly receives orders for fishing trawlers. The thing with boats is that they are pretty expensive. Although it's not to the point where they could only take an order every 3 years and live off of it until the next order, a single order is enough for them to last several months.

Having parked their car in front of the yard, they were just in time to see the christening and test drive of a brand new ship. Seeing this, Jiang Hai can't help but let out a sigh of disbelief. From the looks of things so far, it won't be long before he also owns a boat this big. Just as he was daydreaming about his future, a group of people left the yard. At the very front is a white man in his 60s. A body height of 1.9 meters with a whitening beard, a huge beer belly but still has a strong appearance while wearing a bright yellow safety helmet. As soon as he came out and saw Edward, he was clearly stunned.

"Hey old fool, what are you doing here?" The man happily greeted Edward.

"This is Dalton Green. The owner of the temple, and my old friend. Dalton, this is my new boss. He is the one who bought The Green Forest and because he wants to open his fishery, we are here to bring back some boats." Replied Edward.

“Oh the Green Forest. I know of that place. I previously sold them a couple boats. However not long after, that pitiful dude went bankrupt with the recession. I never would’ve thought that I would be able to witness that big piece of land find a new owner within my lifetime. Not bad young man, not bad.” Hearing the introduction for Jiang Hai, this uncle is clearly shocked because he knows precisely how much that plot of land is worth. In comparison, his shipyard isn’t even worth the estate’s scraps. As such, it is really hard to see that the young man in front of him is actually a wealthy individual.

“Hehe, you are praising me too much.” Jiang Hai said as he shook hands with this uncle.

“Then come with me. I’ll show you around and you guys can tell me what you need.” Dalton stated, then led Jiang Hai and Edward into the huge shipyard.

As soon as they entered the shipyard, the first thing that hit them is the strong smell of engine oil. If an average person were to smell this then they would probably find it difficult to bear with. However Jiang Hai and Edward are clearly fine. Edward has gotten used to it after living with boat engines for so long. Now the smell of engine oil is just like the grass smell on his lawn. As for Jiang Hai, he just came from China and isn’t even afraid of the air there, so why would he fear this smell? What a joke.

“Our company originally only built warships. Now we are left with building fishing boats. But don’t worry, our boats are guaranteed to be as sturdy as a warship. If you get your hands on some cannons and put it on the boat, then it basically is a warship. Hahahaha. Alright, jokes aside, what kind of boats do you need?” Dalton joked while bringing them deeper into the yard. As they got further into the yard, they passed multiple boats on dry dock with bunches of people surrounding them. However when Jiang Hai is asked what he needs, he is really clueless.

“We need 4 boats in total. 3 small boats and a near sea fishing trawler.” Seeing Jiang Hai’s look of cluelessness, Edward answered. In the fishing world, each vessel has their own use.

Take fishing vessels for example. All fishing boats can be separated into two categories. Maritime fishing vessels, and freshwater fishing vessels. In particular,

maritime fishing vessels are separated into coastal, near sea, and far sea categories. There is also the materials to consider; such as wood, steel, fiberglass, aluminum alloy and so on. Then there is the type of driving force required because there are huge differences between motorized, wind powered, and manual boats.

What Jiang Hai needs for his fishery are near sea fishing vessels. This type of vessel is much bigger than those basic motorized boats. Upon hearing Jiang Hai's needs, Dalton lightly nodded, then led them towards an office in the back. Within this room is a bunch of plans which show the structure of each fishing boat. Jiang Hai can just pick the boat he wants from here and specify any other modification he wants to make to the boat.

"This works." After sorting through these for more than half an hour, Edward and Jiang Hai finally settled on a model. To be fair, it's more like Edward picking and Jiang Hai accepting. Due to Jiang Hai not knowing any of the specifics here, so as long as Edward picks a reasonable model, he will accept it.

"Oh that one. This model is not bad. Made up of cement and steel frame, 55 meters in length with 3 individual engines. It can be considered to be one of the largest models available within near sea area. ... " Seeing their choice, Dalton started to give out the specifics about the model. However after the first couple of sentences, Jiang Hai's head is on the verge of exploding. Why? Because he understood nothing afterwards.

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 51: Assembling the boats

Chapter 51: Assembling the boats

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Stop, stop, stop. I trust you on the details, so just give me a price.” Jiang Hai blurted out to stop Dalton from continuing. The majority of the stuff that was just said was clearly not understood by Jiang Hai. It is much better to just name a price and be over with. With the connection with Edward in place, he probably won’t get overly ripped off by the price.

“The price depends on the materials used for the boat, the type of engines, and so on. If I were to give the best in class parts, then the cheapest would be roughly \$40,000 made out of concrete. If it is made with aluminum alloy, then it probably will cost around \$60,000. If you were to use the super strong reinforced glass, then it will cost you roughly \$120,000.” Hearing what Jiang Hai said, Dalton got to the point.

“Wait, what do we need reinforced glass for? With all that money, we can buy 2 aluminum alloy boats.” As soon as Dalton mentioned glass, Edward cut in with a sour mood. For someone like him, what they hate the most are stuff that is just for looks and have no obvious use.

“How is there no use? It’s pretty. And if you were to actually order this type of boat, I can guarantee that the bottom and middle layers will all be semi see through. This is one of our newest products. Just think about it, you can see the surrounding ocean underneath you as you are lying down inside the cabins. Also, this type of glass is semi transparent, so you can see outside, but no one from the outside can see in. This glass’s defensive properties is also much higher than aluminum alloy and it’s also anti corrosive. So a boat like this, with some minor changes, can act as a luxurious yacht. Except it’s much cheaper.” Dalton countered. He knows that Jiang Hai will listen to Edward’s opinions, but in the end he is still the one paying. So as long as he is happy with the product then it becomes easy to deal with.

As expected, as soon as Jiang Hai heard the word yacht, he became interested.

Although inside he is still a nerd, but now that he is wealthy, he is also interested in the activities of the wealthy. These activities right now are not playing around with cars, rather it's playing around with planes and yachts.

Previously, before he left, he heard stories where even small old yachts can easily fetch several million yuan in China. Of course the boats in questions are actually real yachts, not those sightseeing barges. In America, a luxurious yacht cost around a couple million on average. A good one cost somewhere between 1.5 million to 1.6 million, sometimes even a price tag of 2 million isn't even out of the question. But to most wealthy individuals these are just toys to them.

Although Jiang Hai's assets are currently rapidly dwindling, but he still has some ideas of getting a yacht to play with. But getting a yacht by itself kind of seems like a rip off, so modifying a fishing trawler into a yacht seems perfect to him.

Seeing the look in Jiang Hai's eyes, Edward can only shake his head. Since Jiang Hai is still too young, he prefers luxury to practicality. If it was him, he would prefer the aluminum alloy ones. Compared to the concrete ones, this type is much better in all aspects and satisfies the 3 basic needs for most sea fishing vessels. One, they aren't as heavy as the concrete ones. Two, they are much quicker. And finally, they are so much harder to flip over. As for reinforced glass, there is really no need; except for looking fancy and all. However, since Jiang Hai wants it like this, then he might as well as help get a deal for him.

"Then reinforced glass it is. Our boss is still the boss after all, so you can't be lacking in toys to play with. Getting the two in one is the most economical option. But Dalton, I still need to say this. 1.2 million isn't a small number. So you need to include everything in there. Including the 3 engines, depth sonar, all the bedrooms, washrooms and other rooms are all your responsibility. And the prices for our dinghies also needs to be cut." Edward commented glumly to Dalton. But clearly, Dalton on other side appeared much happier.

"No problem. Sonar, satellite, computer, engines will all be the best available in the market. The boat itself will have 3 rooms and a living room. I'll also make sure everything inside will be made of real leather. Beds and sofas will also all be the best. There will also be a central heating system, water and electricity lines will also be installed. As for the dinghies, I'll just charge you the price of one for

all three. How about it?" Dalton replied.

Upon hearing all of this, Edward did some rough calculations. According to what Dalton said, all so those stuff summed up to around \$200,000. This pretty much means he gave them a huge deal. Thus he nodded to Jiang Hai and gave him the go ahead. Jiang Hai who was already interested saw the nodding Edward and breathed a sigh of relief. Everything afterwards became very straight forward since Jiang Hai paid everything up front. Although \$1.2 million is a lot to most people, but to Jiang Hai it isn't a lot; it's still within his acceptance range (1).

The ship will be ready in roughly a month. For boats that are this big, they all require orders to be placed first, but the dinghies are much simpler since they can be built on the spot. In fact, Edward himself can also build these boats. He already has one at home, but Jiang Hai rejected the idea of him building them because they turn out to be just too ugly, almost like those ugly landing crafts. Here at the shipyard, it is also much simpler to build them. Especially with the help of the machines here.

Dinghies, formally known as small boats, are also a type of boat. Boats generally are determined by their sizes. The ones under 6 meters belong to the mini category. 6 to 11 meters are small. 12 to 20 meters are medium, and 20 meters plus are large. In actual fact, the boat that Jiang Hai ordered is a large boat. However, a fishing boat in the end is still a fishing boat; no matter how much you try to modify it to look like a yacht. Hence the not so high price.

As for the 3 other boats, they can really be considered as yachts. But they are also the cheapest of the bunch. According to Jiang Hai's needs, 2 of them will be open deck boats while the other one will be a decked boat. Open deck boats are just like motorboats, except they are just bigger. Generally these boats have a passenger load of 4 to 8 people, but after the deal Dalton gave, Edward changed his mind of getting only 6 seaters and asked for all 8 seaters. There is also no need to worry about transportation since Jiang Hai's F750 aren't just for looks. These motorboats are generally great for sea fishing and patrols. The only down side to them is they don't have a cabin so there is no way to live in it. But there is more than enough room for people to lie down and take a break.

Edward has been continuously explaining to Jiang Hai what each part of the

boat can do, what it's missing and so on. However he doesn't understand much of these. In any case, Edward is a professional in this area so he can be reassured and just listen to all of his suggestions. After picking out an extraordinarily good looking model, Jiang Hai left all the installation and other stuff to Edward. After all, the installation process for these boats is a very annoying step. Not only do you need hard parts like the body of the boat, engines, and propellers, you also need a lot of electronics such as a radio set, pilot controls, control systems, suspension system, navigation and so on.

Compared to the open decked boats, the decked ones aren't much better. Because these boats are known for their leveled decks. No matter if it's the surrounding hand rails or the piloting seats, they are all built on top of the deck regardless of the use of the boat such as sunbathing or fishing. Even night activities are possible.

This boat is the same as the open decked boats, as they are all small boats. Measuring between 15 to 20 feet and able to seat 1 to 8 people. Compared to the open decked boats, this type is much more balanced, though it sacrifices some speed. However if used to entertain guests or to go fishing it is definitely a good choice.

Yet no matter how good of a choice, all this doesn't concern Jiang Hai because he doesn't understand any of this. Hence he left everything to Edward and ran off to visit nearby areas. Assembling the boats will take more of half a day, so he is ready to go for a tour of the surrounding areas.

As for Edward, he didn't give Dalton any courtesy and asked for all the small boats to be made out of fiberglass. Since the big ship is already made out of it, then there is no need to hold back for the small ones. When the time comes, a layer of silver paint will definitely improve their looks. While Edward is busy with the boats.

Sadly, Jiang Hai really doesn't know where to go in Boston. Although to most Americans, Boston is full of must see site because of it's history, but to Jiang Hai, these things aren't a single bit interesting. However there is a place that peaked Jiang Hai's interest near by. The Charlestown Navy Yard and it's destroyer. After arriving in front of the destroyer, Jiang Hai first took a long look at it before entering.

Right now it is already November, which means it is already winter in Boston with an ever decreasing temperature. However the cold here is different from the cold in Harbin because it is a lot more reserved here. In Harbin, the temperature in winter would be around -10°C during day time, but here in Boston, the coldest temperature happened during the middle of the night in January and was only around -5°C . And this temperature only stays this low for at most a couple of days.

You have to admit coastal cities can enjoy the sea breeze. Although the wind might be strong at times, it doesn't feel bone chilling. As for Jiang Hai, who is used to the bone chilling weather in Harbin, the weather here is a piece of cake.

During early winter, the Boston Navy Yard is almost devoid of people. Ever since this place lost the ability to build ships not many people come and sightsee. Despite this place having produced a large amount of ships for the Navy to use during the second world war, the Korean war, the Vietnam war and so on, time is a merciless slaughtering knife. Without knowing it, this place has become a dead harbour and was abandoned by the Navy.

Due to there being no entrance fees, Jiang Hai didn't waste any time and entered the USS Cassin Young museum. One of only four surviving Fletcher-class destroyers still afloat.

Notes

1. Kai: Why do I feel like if I added all his gains and took away his expenses, he would be in negative at the moment... or at least, 1.2 mill won't be chump change

Tl: pretty sure he had 10ish million after the estate and the cows

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 52: Warship museum

Chapter 52: Warship museum

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

TL: Inb4 flames, I'm not too familiar with the specifics of a naval ship, so do excuse my poor/direct translations. (As well as my edits :3)

“Wow, so this is the inside of a destroyer.” As Jiang Hai entered the USS Cassin Young, he began to admire the ship. His first stop; the sailors’ living quarters.

From the outside, this ship isn’t small at all. But once you enter the belly of the beast then you’ll find that the ship is actually pitifully cramped. To be fair, the insides of all warships are like this. Even if it’s carriers; the room available for the sailors are still very tiny. After all, most of the available internal space is used to carry weapons and fuel so that it can protect itself in case of emergencies. Furthermore, the structure itself is thick.

The living quarters that Jiang Hai examined is just like this. Really, really tiny living spaces for the sailors; of around 5 square meters for each room with low ceilings. For an average person like Jiang Hai, with their 1.8 to 1.9 meter height, they all need to lower their heads while in the room. Not only that but these rooms are designed for 4 people with 2 bunk beds; 2 on top, 2 down below. Add in a divided wardrobe and you have the basic quarters. These are really some tough living conditions for the sailors.

After the living quarters, Jiang Hai strolled all over the place and got lost. Even with the directions on the walls he still don’t know where he is. However this place is used to develop American kids’ patriotic belief, so there are always groups of elementary school kids touring the place. Not far from where he is, he found a group of elementary kids from some school in Boston on a field trip with their teacher.

The one doing the explanations at the front is most likely their teacher. However this teacher is unexpectedly beautiful. At first glance she is about 25 or

26 years and of latin descent. Not as white as the average white person, but clearly not black or yellow. With her wheat coloured skin and Brunette hair, she gives off both a healthy and erotic look. Add on the certain appeal all teachers have and it really brings out the charm in her. Suddenly Jiang Hai is reminded of a certain country's romances action drama ([1](#)).

Cough Right, this is only a sudden thought, as it is really easy to tell that she is a honourable person just from her actions.

“What we are standing on right now is the destroyer USS Cassin Young. Can anyone tell me what is the difference between corvettes, destroyers, and cruisers?” Keeping his thoughts to himself, Jiang Hai decided to keep quiet and follow this group around. Along the way the teacher suddenly asked her students a question. In response several hands were raised. At the back of the group, Jiang Hai paid careful attention to this. Since he also wanted to know more about these things.

“Oh, me, me, me! It's because their sizes are different.” After much contemplation, the teacher picked a black kid to answer. Upon being selected, the kid happily answered her question. However when Jiang Hai heard this, he is clearly in doubt. Is it really that simple? And the answer is actually yes.

“That is correct, but also wrong. Naval vessels are mainly separated by their size and their range, well this mainly applies to surface vessels. We usually don't call vessels like submarines as warships. Surface ships include carriers, battleships, cruisers, battle cruisers, destroyers, corvettes, torpedo boats, missile cruisers, anti-submarine vessels, submarine rescue ships, minelayers, minesweepers, amphibious assault crafts and so on. They are mainly separated by their size, then purpose.” As the teacher explained in detail, Jiang Hai can't help but be nervous; because he didn't know any of this before now.

Take surface vessels for example. What is the difference between ships and warships? The difference lies with their displacement. 600 tons and under are ships, while 600 tons and above are warships. Each warship has different displacement and is designed to carry out different roles. To be exact, apart from carriers, all other ships are pretty much the same. The only difference lies in the different types of weapons they carry. These are all facts that Jiang Hai didn't know about, but that is understandable.

Field trips like this don't exist at all in China. This is mainly due to the differences in ideas of the west and the east. Although kids are taught to love their country from young in China, it is mainly to the point of being familiar with the history, know how the world came to be, and know how strong our ancestors were. As for stuff like guns, ships, planes and such, it's enough to just know about their basic existences. If they are interested in stuff like these, then they can learn more about them in university.

Most of the western education system is based around the self interests of learners. Kids will be raised to know what stuff are and how they work. Everything is based around what they want to do. There is really no way to say which is better and which is worse. The only thing that can be said about the two ideals is that there is a big difference between them.

"This ship is a destroyer. These pictures here clearly tell the history of this ship including the battles it participated in. Such as Pearl Harbor, Okinawa, Wright Island ... Since the christening of this ship, it is of glory and stories. Hence since it's retirement, it was not sold or recycled. Rather it was retained as a museum for civilian visits. Ever since 1974 it has remained here." Having explained the basics about warships, she went on to talk about the history of this once magnificent beast.

As the teacher toured the ship with her students, Jiang Hai also followed around. From the bow of the ship to its aft. From it's control room to it's engine compartments and so on. Having followed them around though the entire ship, Jiang Hai finally can be said to have some understanding of boats. However, the ship is only so big and with the pace of elementary kids, the tour was over in half an hour. As the kids exited the ship, Jiang Hai also followed them out in a complete daze.

This really raised the teacher's alarms. In fact she already discovered him following them around while they were still on the ship. No matter how quick or slow their pace was, he would still follow them around. If it was still on the ship then it is understandable, but now that they have left the ship, it becomes really suspicious.

"Sir, is there a problem?" When Jiang Hai still followed them around after leaving the ship, the teacher can't hold it in anymore and asked as she appeased

her students.

“Uh, no problem. I’m headed that way.” Hearing the unpleasantness in the teacher’s voice, Jiang Hai is somewhat stunned. In fact, the teacher truly misunderstood Jiang Hai. Jiang Hai had no intentions of anything at all. He isn’t a saint nor is he a villain, but that cold and calculated question is really hard for him to answer. He can only point in the direction of the temple of the sea shipyard as an answer.

“You sure?” Seeing the direction Jiang Hai is pointing at, the teacher is clearly even more guarded.

“Uh, yeah.” Jiang Hai replied as he nodded like a pecking chicken. Hearing this, the female didn’t say anything else and moved to the side with the kids. The meaning is very clear, I’m going to watch you leave.

Facing the female teacher’s suspicions, Jiang Hai can only smile bitterly. Does he really look like a scoundrel? But it was nothing to be mindful, Jiang Hai never had anything against her anyways so he didn’t say anything and moved on.

Seeing Jiang Hai leave, the teacher finally left with the kids in the opposite direction.

“Teacher, does that man back there like you? Cause he clearly followed us for so long!” After confirming that Jiang Hai has left, a little girl asked the teacher beside her curiously.

“Uh, what! How? He was only going in the same direction as us.” The teacher answered back quickly but with some embarrassment. However this answer clearly didn’t fulfill the students’ curiosity.

“Miss, what you did back there is wrong. My mom said, a woman needs to give a man some signals. Miss you’re this pretty but yet still don’t have a boyfriend. You are just too careful.” Another male black student commented. However upon hearing this, the teacher is clearly upset again.

“How old are you? And what do you know about signals?!” The teacher commented back smiling.

“Is that man really trying to pursue me?” Having finished joking around about Jiang Hai, the kids moved on. However the teacher turned her head and look at

the leaving Jiang Hai behind her. Upon seeing his leaving back, she shook her head and thought it's all just a coincidence. But thinking back to the half hour on the ship, if that man really has no thoughts for her then that is clearly a lie. There is no way that he was just there to listen to her explanations because all of these are just basic knowledge here.

Foreigners simply don't understand the pain of elementary school in China.

As for Jiang Hai, he already returned to the temple completely dejected. But quickly left to sightsee other areas.

Notes

[1.](#) TL: need I say more?

[\(Ad support\) TOC \(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 53: Dessert shop

Chapter 53: Misunderstanding

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Boss, you should still go out for a stroll. It’s too loud here.” Edward yelled as he pointed to the earplugs in his ears ([1](#)).

As for Jiang Hai, he is in an even more awkward position. When he was walking earlier, he didn’t pay much attention to his surroundings. Hence he bumped into one of the workers and knocked over the stuff he was carrying all over the place. Although the stuff isn’t anything important and no injuries had occurred, for someone like Jiang Hai who doesn’t know anything of the trade remaining here will only bring chaos. Jiang Hai loitering here isn’t because he doesn’t trust Edward, but it’s because he has nowhere to go.

“But I don’t know where to go.” Jiang Hai replied embarrassingly as he scratched his head. That previous stroll was only 40 some minutes long, and the majority of that time was him following a bunch of kids around. However, after that trip he really has no clue where to go next.

Hearing this, even Edward is perplexed because he also don’t know. He normally either stays at home or is in Winthrop, hence he doesn’t know of any interesting places around here.

“Across the harbour is Little Italy. You know how good Italian food is. Not far from Little Italy is downtown Boston and Chinatown. There is a lot of restaurants and snack shops there. According to what you Chinese people call it, it’s something like a gourmet street or something.” Maybe it’s because he heard Jiang Hai and Edward’s conversation, Dalton, who was tallying the materials, came over and explained.

Hearing that there is a gourmet street around, Jiang Hai’s mouth is already watering. Taking a look at the time on his phone, it’s only 10 am, not yet time for lunch, but it’s still worth taking a look. In conformance to his ideal of not messing with the professionals, Jiang Hai left again.

The main thing is, he isn't of any help if he remained behind. Compared to the noisy shipyard, he very much prefers a place where he can sit down and enjoy stuff. Having left the shipyard, Jiang Hai followed Dalton's instructions and exited the harbour.

Not long after leaving the harbour, a special region appeared in front of him. According to the passersby, this here is Boston's Little Italy. But upon entering, Jiang Hai found this place to be rather tiny. Although he is from northern China, where the people there enjoy lots of booze and meat, but he still don't understand the practice of enjoyment. Sipping on a cup of coffee for an entire afternoon and what not, is a practice foreign to him.

Although there are some sceneries around, but it's really so-so. As soon as he entered, he felt a bizarre feeling from the surroundings. Seeing the menus in front of him, most of the stuff listed is the same as the restaurants in Winthrop. The only difference here lies with it's smaller portions and further intricacies. As for the price, it is pretty much the same. Not too expensive.

Since this is downtown Boston, not the suburbs like Winthrop, the streets here are in rather poor conditions. Full of holes, cracks and what not. Because Boston is one of the earliest cities founded here, later development didn't improve the downtown area, rather they spread the city out. Comparing Boston to Beijing, this area can be said to be the second ring of the city. Add on the fact that Jiang Hai is poor with directions, so while strolling he became lost. Of course he can still go back, but it's troublesome to find Chinatown now.

"Ai forget it, let's just grab a drink and ask someone for directions later." After some circling and realising that he is completely lost, Jiang Hai let out a sigh and found a nearby cafe.

Although he doesn't understand the practice of enjoying coffee, but he still knows that a cafe is not all about coffee. In the early winters of Boston, there are rarely any people on the patio since most of the people preferred to squish into the warm cafe than stay out in the cold. Seeing this, Jiang Hai took the wise decision of not joining the crowd and took a seat outside.

"Sir, what would you like to order?" As soon as he sat down, a waitress came out from the store with a menu and asked. He is mainly here for a break and not

for a drink, so everything else is irrelevant. Hence he mainly focused on the drinks portion of the menu.

“Umm, a cup of watermelon juice.” Pointing at the watermelon juice on the menu, Jiang Hai replied back.

“Uhh, sir, the watermelon juice is cold.” upon hearing Jiang Hai’s reply, the waitress is clearly stunned. Who in their right mind would drink something cold in this weather.

“I know it’s cold, but it’s okay.” Jiang Hai said reassuringly. He is like most northerners in China with their love of cold drinks during winter.

“Alright!” The customers are kings, hence the waitress confirmed and left.

A short while later, a cup of fresh watermelon juice appeared in front of Jiang Hai. Upon seeing this, Jiang Hai took a large gulp and felt the pain of a brain freeze. But this feeling just made him refreshed.

“Miss, miss! Look! There is the guy who was following us!” Just at this moment, a black kid was startled at the scene outside and yelled at his teacher inside the store.

“En? Where? Let me see, ah, it really is that uncle. Didn’t he enter that shipyard? When did he appear here?” A white girl beside the black kid asked curiously.

Hearing the yells of the kids, the female teacher also turned around from the bar and saw Jiang Hai’s figure outside.

“En? Watermelon juice?” She turned around at just the right time to see Jiang Hai suffering from his brain freeze. This clearly stunned her, then she looked at the watermelon juice in his hands and clearly is upset. Again. Originally she was already mad, but now she is on the verge of exploding.

Her original plan was bringing the kids back to Winthrop right after the tour, not remaining here. If it wasn’t because of the driver ditching them here, then there is no need for her to spend this much money on the kids. Of course she isn’t regretting her decision, but she is clearly annoyed. Now that Jiang Hai appeared in front of her again, it would be strange if she was still in a good mood.

“Louis, Susan, look after your friends. I’m going to have a nice long chat with him.” Most American girls really have an explosive attitude. Seeing Jiang Hai outside sipping on his watermelon juice, she is even more angry. Having settled her students, she picked up her jacket and went out.

“Sir if you have anything to say, then say it. If you keep on following me like this then I’m going to call the cops.” When the teacher left the dessert shop, Jiang Hai also heard it, but paid it no mind because he doesn’t know who came out. However this girl clearly has a goal in mind, she had appeared in front of him, and immediately stated.

“En? Oh. ... Hi, how are you?” Hearing the teacher, Jiang Hai turned his attention from the juice in front of him to his side. As a result, saw the fuming teacher; almost causing him to choke to death. From what she just said, it appears she has mistaken him again....

“I’m not one bit alright. Sir, if you don’t tell me why you are following me and the kids, then I’m pretty sure you can explain it to the police.” The teacher said solemnly as she stared at him with her pair of black eyes.

“Uhh, I really didn’t follow you. I can only say this is mere...” Jiang Hai quickly replied.

“Coincidence? Haha, such an old story and you’re still going to say it?” The teacher cut him off. She has obviously heard this excuse many times. To be fair, the teacher is obviously pretty. 3 quarters latino makes her look nice and firm, while that last quarter caucasian makes her straight and tall. A body height of 175, a head full of black curls, 5 refined points, and an exquisite body where the big places are big and slim where it should be. It really is a package for misfortunes, however Jiang Hai can swear to god that he didn’t follow her here.

“It’s not a coincidence, but a misunderstanding! I never thought that I would meet you twice in one day. Originally I was here to buy a couple of boats. My people are still are the temple of the sea. If you don’t believe me then you can go take a look. But because I don’t understand any of that stuff, I left for a stroll. At the beginning on the destroyer, I really did follow you around, but without any ill intentions. That was my first time on a destroyer, plus you were great at explaining, so I just followed along while learning. In the end you mistook me.

Now I was originally headed for the gourmet street in Chinatown, but I got lost and ended up looking for something to drink. Later I was going to ask the waitress how to get there, but now you came out....” Seeing the mad goddess in front of him, Jiang Hai awkwardly explained. Hearing the explanation and seeing that panicking expression, the girl is somewhat convinced, but still pissed.

Notes

[1.](#) Kai: I guess last chapter he didn’t instantly go to a new place, but went inside and had a chat

[\(Ad support\)](#) [TOC](#) [\(Ad support\)](#)

Chapter 54: Street food

Chapter 54: Street food

Translated by me, edited by Kai.

“Hey, Sandy! Why are you here?” Just as Jiang Hai and this girl were in an awkward situation and having no clue how to proceed, a rescuing voice popped out of nowhere. This was then followed by the appearance of a group of teenagers.

This group of teenagers consisted of 8 individuals of both sex. With all their different winter jackets, they clearly are wary of the local weather. Compared to them, Jiang Hai is only wearing a sweater plus a windbreaker. This might seem strange to them, but to Jiang Hai, this is more than enough for this weather.

“Eh, Delia? Why are you out shopping? Aren’t you suppose to be in class?” Seeing this group of people, this teacher named Sandy is clearly baffled.

“Today is the Celtic’s practice match. Our basketball team got a couple of tickets, so being the captain of our cheerleading team, I decided to go take a look.” One of the girls happily replied.

Hearing this, Sandy can only roll her eyes. This girl is really a show off. Even if you’re going to the match, that is later in the evening. Why are you hanging out on the streets for?

This is completely different from China. In China, the most popular people in middle school and high school are always those with the best grades. If it’s not those extremely beautiful girls, then it’s the girls with the best grades. However this is completely different in America.

The kids here that strive for good grades are all generally outcasts. Instead, the most popular kids are always those who are the most open to having fun. For example, the most popular males in highschool are generally those who are great with music or club elites; such as the football team’s quarterback. Although professional basketball isn’t as popular, basketball in highschool and university is another story. The players in this case are popular to the point of no

return.

As for girls, the most popular of course aren't those with scholarships, but rather cheerleaders. They are like the queens of all the school's girls and highly sought after by all.

There were greetings from all the boys in the group. The males all nodded, smiling at Sandy. Especially that tall, strong, and self confident one that is standing behind the girls.

"Hello." Sadly, those smiles did not arouse any attention from Sandy.

"Sis, you still haven't said why you're here. What's the situation? Did we interrupt you guys?" Seeing Sandy and Jiang Hai together, the girl is obviously thinking in the wrong direction.

"No, I'm just clearing my misunderstandings with him. I brought the kids from town for a tour of the navy yard. Along the way I found him following us the whole time." Sandy said as she shook her head and pointed at Jiang Hai.

"Oh. So our great ranch owner has this kind of hobby?" Sandy's reply clearly peaked this girl's interest. She looked at Jiang Hai excitedly with an expression that can be described in 4 words; I am very curious.

"No, I wasn't..... Wait. You know me?" Jiang Hai was just about to explain, but halfway through, he suddenly stopped. Since when did she know he owned a ranch?

"Haha, you really don't remember me? You rich people really have poor memories. I'm Delia George. I was the one who transported all the horses you bought from my dad." The girl awkwardly explained upon hearing the question. Hearing this, Jiang Hai finally remembered.

It seems like there really was this beautiful girl when he and Robins were there buying horses. When they were packing the horses, Robins clearly introduced her. At the start it was all jokes and no need to remember, but from the looks of things, the girl clearly remembered him.

"Oh, so it's you. Now that you changed out of your cowboy gear, it is really hard to recognize you." With an awkward smile, Jiang Hai replied back flirtily.

“che, Sandy you don’t need to be afraid. This guy is also from the town. His the rich moron who bought the Green Forest. He probably doesn’t have any strange hobbies. If he really fancies you, then you just hit the jackpot.” Having ignored Jiang Hai’s previous comments, Delia turned her attention back to the embarrassed Sandy and commented.

Actually Sandy is also from Winthrop. The be precise, one of the town’s elementary teachers.

She recently heard rumors about how the town’s Green Forest was purchased by some mysterious oriental person. However, this person rarely shows up in town hence her cluelessness. Now with Delia’s explanation, this was clearly all a misunderstanding.

“Since this is all a misunderstanding then I apologize for my wild acts. I still need to look after the kids, so bye.” Having finally cleaned up this awkward mess with Jiang Hai, Sandy waved good bye to Delia and went back into the dessert shop.

“Hey millionaire, do I get a reward for solving this mess for you?” Seeing Sandy entering the shop, Jiang Hai can finally relax. Why? Since it’s never good to be implicated as a pervert. Seeing the relaxed Jiang Hai, Delia didn’t leave, rather stared smilingly at him.

“Alright, alright. As for thank you, how about I treat you to lunch in Chinatown?” Jiang Hai happily replied back. Hearing this, Delia clearly is intrigued. No one can turn down an offer of free food, especially teenage girls. However just as Delia was about to agree, the basketball player beside her was clearly unhappy. Having finally pulled her away and noticing the guarded looks, she can’t help but stick her tongue out at him.

Clearly, it would become awkward with Jiang Hai being added into this group. Hence having thought about it, the girl decided to let go of this meal for now.

“Then I’ll remember it for now cause we still have things to do today. Since you’re headed to Chinatown, it’s on the second left that way. To be honest, you could’ve gone there with either the red or orange subway line.” Delia happily pointed out the route then left with her friends.

Having finally gotten the directions he needs, Jiang Hai also happily left after

finishing his drink and paying the bill. Seeing Jiang Hai leaving from inside the store, Sandy is also somewhat let down. It seems it was really a misunderstanding. He really wasn't following her around.

Currently, Jiang Hai has forgotten all about what just happened at the shop. Having followed Delia's instructions, he quickly arrived at Boston's Chinatown. From far away, he already smelled the distinct Chinatown smell and saw those chinese and english restaurant signs. Plus all the stalls along the road with all their different ethnic owners.

Those delicious smells mainly come from food trucks and stalls. However the gourmet street that Jiang Hai had in mind is completely different from what is actually here. Instead of all the popular snacks in China like roadside skewers, cold noodles, stinky tofu, egg roll and the likes, the street food here are more western focused with stuff like burgers, hot dogs, sausages, doughnuts, and shellfish.

Although the style of food is different, Jiang Hai isn't picky about his food. Edward had told him to solve lunch by himself as Edward will be having lunch with the yard workers. So he checked, the time, just past 11 am, perfect time for lunch. And took a look at his wallet to make sure he has enough. Having everything in place, Jiang Hai is now ready for a round trip with the street stalls.

First up, 2 doughnuts from a popular doughnut shop, then came a bunch of tacos from a food truck, and 10 chicken and lamb skewers from an arabian shop. Indian samosas, roast lamb combos, jerked meats, quesadys,

Jiang Hai had a bit of everything along the way. Due to America being a country built up from immigrants, there are all kinds of food around. If this was New York, then there is no way for Jiang Hai to try everything in just a single day. However this is Boston which is much smaller than New York. Furthermore, due to their close proximity, Boston pretty much has everything that New York has.

Jiang Hai is actually pretty satisfied with this trip. Non-stop eating from one end of the street to the other end. When he finally got there, he was still hungry, so he turned around and did it all over again. Due to the dragon pearl in his body, the amount of food he needs to consume is astronomical. Eating from one end of the street to the other end and then back again, only barely managed to

satisfy him.

[\(Ad support\) TOC](#) [Next \(Ad support\)](#)